

31. But he could not make the latter tremble in battle before him, and so again pierced him with many arrows. Then the son of Phalguna cut off the bow of the Kosala king once more ;

32. And he struck him with thirty shafts furnished with wings of the *Kanka* feather. Thereupon that prince *Vrihadvala* taking up another bow,

33—34. And waxing irascible, pierced with many an arrow the son of Phalguna. Indeed, O afflicter of enemies, the battle, that took place for the sake of Bhishma, between them both, O king, inflamed with anger and both well-versed in all manner of warfare, was like that between *Vali* and *Vasava* in the days of yore on the occasion of the war between the celestials and the *Asuras*.

35. *Bhimasena* then fighting with the elephant division looked highly beautiful, like the wielder of the thunderbolt himself running upon the mountains.

36. Those elephants, huge-bodied like the hills, being thus slaughtered in battle fell down on the earth in large numbers, filling the earth with their roars.

37. Those elephants prodigious like hills and resembling broken heaps of antimony appeared beautiful, as they lay prostrate, like so many mountains covering the earth's surface.

38. Then king *Yudhisthira* that great bowman, protected by a mighty division encountering the *Madra* king in battle began to afflict him sorely.

39. The highly powerful ruler of the *Madras* also, for the sake of rescuing *Bhisma* began to afflict that mighty warrior the son of *Dharma* in battle.

40. The king of the *Sindhus* having pierced *Virata* with nine shafts of straight-knots once more pierced him with thirty shafts of keen edges.

41. Then *Virata* also that leader of a division, O king, in return pierced the ruler of the *Sindhus* with thirty sharp arrows between his breast.

42. Then those two kings of the *Matsyas* and the *Sindhus*, both of charming appearance and both furnished with beautiful armours, weapons and standards, and both wielding excellent bows and swords, appeared highly resplendent.

43. Then *Drona* being engaged in that dreadful battle with the son of the *Panchala* king, fought on fiercely with arrows of close knots.

44. Then *Drona*, O mighty monarch, having cut off the mighty bow of *Prisata's*

son, pierced the latter with a set of fifty shafts.

45. Then that slayer of hostile heroes namely *Prisata's* son, took up another bow, and then he hurled at *Drona* a terrible mace resembling the bludgeon of *Death* himself.

46. Then *Drona* with fifty shafts, in that battle repulsed that mace decked with plates of gold as it flew swiftly towards himself.

47. Then, O king, that mace cut into fragments by the arrows shot from *Drona's* bow, and splintered and shattered into pieces, fell down on the surface of the earth.

48. Beholding his mace thus destroyed that afflicter of foes, viz., the son of *Prisata* hurled at *Drona* his lance, excellent, and made of iron.

49. *Drona*, O *Bharata*, cut off that lance with nine arrows in the battle, and he then began to afflict the great bowman, viz., *Prisata's* son in battle.

50. Then, O mighty monarch, for the sake of *Bhisma*, raged the fierce battle between *Drona* and *Prisata's* son,—battle that was dreadful to the extreme and terrible in its aspects.

51. Then *Arjuna* sighting the son of *Ganga* rushed at him discharging sharp arrows, like an infuriate elephant rushing in the woods at a compeer in the same state.

52. The highly puissant king *Bhagadatta* confronted *Arjuna*, and held the latter in check with a thick shower of arrows.

53. Thereupon *Arjuna* pierced the elephant of *Bhagadatta* rushing towards himself in battle, with many keen-pointed and iron-made arrows, all bright as silver.

54. The son of *Kunti*, O king, urged on *Sikhandin*, saying "Advance, advance upon *Bhisma* and slay him."

55. Thereupon, O elder brother of *Pandu* the ruler of the *Pragjyotsas* abandoning *Pandu's* son in battle, rushed swiftly, O king, towards the chariot of *Drupada*.

56. Thereat *Arjuna*, O mighty monarch, quickly advanced towards *Bhisma*, with *Sikhandin* in front of him, and then there raged a (dreadful) fight.

57. Thereupon, in that battle your warriors, uttering fierce yells, rushed quickly at the son of *Pandu*. Then all this appeared marvellous.

58. Then, O ruler of men, the army of your sons consisting of various divisions, Arjuna began to scatter away like a strong gale scattering away clouds in the welkin.

59. Then Sikhandin confronting the grandsire of the Bharatas, pierced patiently the latter with myriads of shafts.

60. Then Bhishma began to consume the Kshatriyas in battle, like a fire, having his chariot for its fire-chambers, his bow for its flames, his swords, lances and maces for its fuel and his numerous shafts for its dreadful scintillations.

61. Just as a conflagration fed with a constant supply of fuel leaps from house to house being aided by a breeze, so also did Bhishma then burn the hostile troops displaying his weapons of celestial make.

62. Then that mighty car-warrior Bhishma, holding in check the division of the son of Pandu (Arjuna), slew those Somakas in battle who followed Partha,

63. With arrows furnished with golden wings and of great sharpness and depressed knots; and he filled the points cardinal and subsidiary of the compass with the echoes of his war-cries.

64. He dislodged car-warriors from their cars, and felled, O king, horsemen with their chargers, he also made the mighty car-division look like Palmyra groves, with trees deprived of their leafy heads.

65. Then Bhishma that foremost of all wielders of weapons deprived, O king, the cars, the chargers and the elephants, of their respective riders, in that battle.

66. The troops then, O king, began to tremble, hearing the twang of his bow-string and the slap of his palms, that resembled the thunder itself.

67. Indeed, O lord of men, the arrows of Bhishma did never fail to hit their marks. Shot from his bow, the arrows did not stick merely on the skin of warriors and animals.

68. Then, O king, O ruler of men, we beheld cars deprived of their riders, dragged on all side, with the velocity of the wind by the fleet steeds that were yoked to them.

69—71. Full fourteen thousand high-famed mighty car-warriors of illustrious extraction, ready to sacrifice their lives in battle, and unretreating and heroic, and owner of standards adorned with gold, all belonging to the race of the Chedis, the Kasis and Karushas, confronting the heroic Bhishma who then appeared like Death himself with mouth wide open, were swiftly despatched to the other world with all their cars, elephants and chargers. There was

not a single mighty car-warrior, O king, among the Somakas,

72—73. Who having confronted Bhishma in that battle, was able to return alive from the engagement. Beholding all those warriors despatched to the domain of the lord of the departed, people then thought high of Bhishma's prowess. No car-warrior then ventured to encounter that hero.

74. Save and except that heroic son of Pandu, owning cream-coloured steeds, and having Krishna for his charioteer, and that prince of the Panthalas, Sikhandin of immeasurable energy.

Thus ends the hundred and seventeenth chapter, the dreadful battle and carnage, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXVIII.

(BHISHMA-BADHA PARVA.)—Contd.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then, O foremost of men, Sikhandin having encountered Bhishma in battle, pierced the latter on his breast with ten broad-headed shafts of great sharpness.

2. Then the son of Ganga looked at Sikhandin with his eyes blazing in rage, and, O Bharata, he seemed to burn the latter by his glance only.

3. But, O king, remembering his femininity, Bhishma did not wound him before the eyes of all in that battle. The latter however comprehended it not.

4. Therefore, O monarch, Arjuna said to Sikhandin, "swiftly rush at the grandsire and slay him."

5. What is that you want to speak, O hero? Slay the mighty car-warrior Bhishma, I do not see a man in the whole army of Yudhisthira,

6. Who is able to fight with Bhishma in battle, except yourself, O best of men? This I say to you forsooth."

7. Thus spoken to by Pritha's son, O foremost of the Bharatas, Sikhandin speedily covered the grandsire with arrows of various description;

8. But disregarding those arrows, your sire Devavrata, wrought up with wrath engaged to fight with Arjuna by means of his shafts.

9. That mighty car-warrior also despatched the forces of the Pandavas to the other world, O sire, with his sharp-pointed shafts.

10. On the other hand, O king, the sons of Pandu, supported by mighty divisions covered Bhishma over, like clouds covering the orb of the day.

11. Then, O foremost of the Bharata, that chief of the Bharatas thus surrounded on all sides, began to consume those heroes in battle like a raging conflagration burning the woods.

12. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of your son as much as he simultaneously fought with Arjuna and protected the grand-sire.

13. Then all people were gratified with the feat achieved by your high-minded son Dussasana wielding his bow;

14. For then he, single-handed, fought with the Pandavas including Arjuna himself; he then fought so fiercely that the Pandavas were unable to resist him.

15. In that battle car-warriors were deprived of their cars by Dussasana; mighty horse-men and highly powerful elephant-riders,

16. Mangled with his shafts, fell down on the surface of the earth. Huge-tusked elephants afflicted with arrow-wounds ran in all directions.

17. Just as fire fed with fuel fiercely blazes forth with terrible flames, so did your son consume the troops of the Pandavas.

18. None of the heroic car-warriors of the Pandava host, O Bharata, was then able to vanquish, nay to encounter, that warrior of gigantic stature,

19. Except Arjuna the son of the great Indra, having white steeds and owning Krishna for his charioteer. Then, O king, the ever-victorious Arjuna defeating Dussasana in battle,

20. Rushed against Bhishma even before the very eyes of the people assembled there. Though vanquished, your son then depending greatly upon the strength of Bhishma's arms,

21. Furiously fought with the Pandavas comforting his own troops at the same time. Arjuna also, O king, engaged in battle appeared very beautiful.

22. Sikhandin also, O monarch, pierced the grand-sire in battle with sharp arrows, of which the touch resembled that of the bolt of heaven and which were mortal like the virulent venom of snakes.

23. These shafts, O ruler of men, did not cause any the slightest pain to your father, and then the son of Ganga received those arrows with a smile.

24. Just as a man burning with thirst eagerly welcomes a shower of rain, so did also the son of Ganga receive the shower of arrows discharged by Sikhandin.

25. Then, O mighty monarch, the Kshatriyas beheld Bhishma look terrible, as he consumed the ranks of the high-souled Pandavas.

26. Then your son commanded, O sire, all your troops saying,—"Assail from all sides the heroic Phalguna.

27. The valiant Bhishma conversant with all duties will protect us in battle." Then those troops of yours dismissing all fears fought on with the Pandavas.

28. (Again did Duryodhana say) "Yonder is Bhishma, with his tall standard marked with the device of a golden palmyra, striving for saving the honour and armours of all the Dhiitarashtra warriors.

29. Even the celestials striving vigorously cannot overcome the mighty and high-souled Bhishma in battle, what to speak of the sons of Pritha who are mere mortals.

30. Therefore, O warriors, do you not run away getting Phalguna as an adversary in battle. I myself, putting forth my best energies, shall this day battle against the Pandavas,

31. United with all these rulers of earth, all exerting their best in battle." Hearing those words of your son wielding the bow,

32. All the valiant and highly powerful warriors wrought up with rage, belonging to the clans of the Videhas, the Kalingas, the Daserakas, and many other tribes,

33. Fell upon Arjuna in battle. The Nishadas, the Souviras, the Valhikas, the Daradas, the Westerners, the Northerners and the Malavas,

34. Abhisahas, the Surasenas, the Sivis, the Vasatis, the Salavas, the Sakas, the Trigarttas, the Ambhasthas with the Kekayas,

35-38. Then rushed upon the son of Pritha like a flight of insects rushing at the flames of a fire. Then, O mighty monarch, that highly powerful hero Dhananjaya, always dreaded in battle, invoking celestial weapons, fixed them on his bowstring, and aiming them at those hundreds of enemy's divisions of car-warriors swiftly consumed them all, by means of those powerful darts of great velocity, like fire burning down a flight of insects. Then the bow Gandiva of that resolute Bowman appeared resplendent as he shot myriads upon myriads of arrows from it. Then, O mighty monarch, those Kourava warriors with their tall standards splintered into pieces,

39-42. Ventured not, even in a body, to proceed against Arjuna owning the standard marked with the device of an ape. Afflicted with shafts by the diadem-decked Arjuna, car-warriors fell with their standards, horse-riders with their horses and elephant-riders with their elephants. Then the earth became soon covered with divisions of kings flying in all directions in consequence of the shafts shot by the arms of Arjuna. Then having completely crushed the enemy's ranks, the son of Pritha,

42. Sped numerous shafts at your son Dussasana. Those iron-tipped arrows, having pierced Dussasana,

43. Penetrated the earth like so many snakes entering their holes in ant-hills. Then Arjuna slew the steeds and charioteers of the latter.

44. Then that valiant hero deprived Vivinsati of his car with twenty shafts and wounded the latter with five shafts of straight-knots.

45. Then the son of Kunti, owning white steeds, having pierced Kripa, Vikarna, and Salya with many iron arrows, deprived them of their cars.

46. Thus deprived of their chariots, O sire, Kripa, Salya, Dussasana, Vikarna and Vivinsati,

47. All fled away from the field of battle being completely worsted by Savyasachin. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, having vanquished the mighty car-warriors at the forenoon,

48. Partha then blazed forth in battle like fire without even one curl of smoke. He then, in consequence of his pouring arrowy showers, looked like the sun scattering his myriad rays in all directions.

49. He felled also, O mighty monarch, many rulers of the earth all mighty car-warriors, having compelled them to turn their faces away from the field of battle.

50. Then, O Bharata, between the armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas, he caused a mighty river of bloody current to flow.

51. Large bodies of elephants, steeds and car-warriors were slain by car-warriors; and many were the car-warriors slain by elephants and many the horse-men slain by foot-soldiers.

52. In all directions then fell many heads and bodies cut in the middle, of car-warriors, horsemen and elephant-riders.

53. The field of battle, O king, became strewn with fallen and falling bodies of many royal car-warriors even then decked with bracelets and graced with ear-rings,

54. The field was also covered over with many bodies mangled by car-wheels and trampled upon by elephants. Foot-soldiers, and horsemen with their chargers fled away in all directions.

55. Elephants and car-warriors fell in all directions. Many were the cars that then lay scattered on the field with their wheels, standards and yokes splintered into pieces.

56. Then the field of battle bespattered with the gore of elephants, horses and car-warriors, appeared beautiful like the autumnal sky covered with specks of red cloud.

57. Dogs, crows, vultures, wolves and jackals and other beasts set up loud yells, at the sight of food that was then before them.

58. Then, when Rakshasas and evil spirits were seen to roar there, various kinds of winds began to blow in all directions.

59. Strings of gold and precious standards were seen suddenly to be fluttered by the wind, and began to tremble.

60. Thousands of white umbrellas, and many mighty car-warriors with their standards, were seen strewn on the surface of the earth.

61. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Bhishma having invoked into existence a celestial weapon rushed at the son of Kunti even before the very eyes of all bowmen.

62. Then clad in mail Sikhandin confronted him rushing in battle. Whereupon Bhishma withdrew that dart resembling fire itself.

63. Meanwhile Kunti's son owning white steeds having confounded the grand sire began to slaughter your forces.

Thus ends the hundred and eighteenth chapter, the fierce battle and carnage, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. When the division of the two armies strong in numbers and arranged in order of battle, met one another, all the unretreating heroes, O Bharata, then rushed to battle, keeping in view the regions of Brahma.

2. In that pell-mell fight, neither similar divisions fought with their similars, nor scar warriors with car-warriors, nor foot-soldier with foot-soldiers.

3. Horsemen then fought not with horse-men and elephant-riders fought not with other elephant-riders. But like men siezed with fury, O Bharata, they indiscriminately slaughtered one another, O monarch, in that battle.

4. Fierce and great was the carnage that then spread itself among the ranks of the two armies, as men and elephants, by hundreds, were scattered slain in all directions.

5. In that fierce battle the slaughter was indiscriminate. Then, O Bharata, Salya, Kripa, Chitrasena,

6. Dussasana and Vikarna, all riding on resplendent chariots, and all mighty heroes, made the host of the Pandavas tremble in battle before them.

7. The army of the Pandavas thus slaughtered by those high-souled warriors, was caused to wheel in various motions, like a bark tossed by the wind on the waters (of the sea).

8. Just as bleak wintry cold penetrates into the very vitals of the kine, so did then Bhishma cut the army of the sons of Pandu to the very quick.

9. Then many elephants of your army looking like newly-formed clouds, were felled by the high-souled son of Pritha in that battle.

10. The leaders of hosts of combatants were then seen to be crushed and mangled by the son of Pritha with his arrows and lances shot by thousands.

11—12. Mighty elephants fell there setting up loud yells of agony and distress. The field of battle then looked beautiful being strewn over with the ornament-decked bodies of slain warriors of high soul, as also with their heads graced with ear-rings. In that conflict, O monarch, so destructive of mighty heroes,

13—14. When both Bhishma, and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu were displaying their prowess, your sons beholding the grandsire strive vigorously in battle, O king, rushed at the head all of their troops. Desirous of death in battle, and looking upon heaven as their final goal,

15. They rushed against the Pandavas in that battle destructive of many heroes. The Pandavas also, O monarch, remembering the diverse woes and hardships

16. Inflicted, O ruler of men, on them by you and your son and dismissing all fears, and desirous of attaining to the regions of Brahma,

17. Cheerfully fought on with your troops and your sons. Then that mighty

car-warrior the commander of the Pandava host addressing his troops said :—

18. "Rush you, O Somakas, together with the Srinjayas at the son of Ganga." Hearing those words of their commander-in-chief, the Somakas and the Srinjayas,

19. Though afflicted with showers of arrows rushed at the son of Ganga. Thus assailed, O king, your father, the son of Santanu,

20. Influenced by wrath fought with the Srinjayas. To your highly renowned father, O sire, in the days of yore, the intelligent Rama,

21. Imparted a lesson in the use of weapons that were capable of destroying the hostile ranks. Depending upon that instruction of his and thinning the ranks of the enemy,

22. The old grandsire of the Kurus, viz., Bhishma that slayer of hostile heroes day after day slaughtered ten thousand warriors belonging to the Pandava host.

23. On that the tenth day of the battle, O foremost of the Bharatas, from among the Matsyas and the Panchalas, Bhishma, single handed,

24. Having slain ten thousand elephants, slew also seven mighty car-warriors. Then the great grandsire also slew five thousand car-warriors.

25. In that fierce battle in addition to all this, fourteen thousand foot-soldiers, one thousand elephants, and ten thousand steeds

26. Were slain, O ruler of men, by your father through his superior education. Then reducing in number all the divisions led by rulers of earth;

27. Bhishma slew Satanika the dear-loved brother of Virata. Having slain Satanika in battle, the valiant Bhishma

28. Felled thousand royal warriors with broad-headed shafts. All those Kshatriyas of the Pandava host, that followed Dhananjaya,

29—30. Approaching Bhishma, were despatched to the abode of Death. Thus covering the ten points of the compass with the net-work of his arrows, as also the army of the Parthas, Bhishma remained the master of the situation. On that the tenth day of the battle, achieving marvellous feats,

31. Bhishma stayed between the two armies, holding his bow and arrows in his hands. O king, then none of the royal warriors were able to look at him,

32. Who then resembled the summer sun scorching the world from the meridian. Just as in the days of yore, Sakra afflicted the hosts of the Daityas,

33. So did, O Bharata, Bhishma then afflict the ranks of the Pandavas. Then beholding Bhishma thus display his prowess in battle, the slayer of Madhu,

34. That son of Devaki, joyfully addressed Dhananjaya saying :—"Yonder is Bhishma, the son of Santanu staying between the two armies.

35. Slay him by putting forth your prowess, and victory will be yours. Check him through your prowess even there where he is penetrating our ranks.

36. None among us, O lord, is capable of bearing the shafts of Bhishma save and except your mighty self." Then, O king, thus urged on, Dhananjaya owning a standard bearing the device of an ape,

37—38. Rendered Bhishma with his standard, chariot and horses, invisible by his shafts. Then that foremost of the Kuru chiefs (Bhishma) also, with the shower of his own arrows scattered the arrowy down-pour discharged by that son of Pandu. Thereupon the king of the Panchalas, and the valiant Dhristaketu,

39. Pandu's son Bhimasena, Prisata's son Dhristadyumna, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, Chekitana, the five Kekaya brothers,

40. The mighty-armed Satyaki, the son of Subhadra, Ghatakacha, the sons of Drupada, Sikhandin, the highly powerful Kuntivaja,

41. Susarman, and Virata, these and many other mighty heroes of the Pandava host were then afflicted by the shafts of Bhishma,

42. Then from the ocean of grief in which they were sunk, they were rescued by Phalguna. Thereupon grasping an excellent weapon Sikhandin

43. Assailed Bhishma, being protected by the diadem-decked Arjuna. Then slaying all the followers of Bhishma, and knowing what should be done in battle after what,

44. The unvanquished Vibhatsu rushed even at Bhishma himself. Then Satyaki, Chekitana, Dhristadyumna of the Prisata race,

45. Virata and Drupada, the two sons of Madri begotten by Pandu, all rushed against Bhishma, their attack being covered by the firm Bowman Arjuna.

46. Then in that battle, Abhimanyu and the five sons of Draupadi all with weapons upraised rushed against Bhishma.

47. All those firm bowmen, never receding from the fight, pierced Bhishma on many parts of his body with arrows steadily directed.

48. Then baffling all those arrows shot by those foremost rulers of earth, that warrior of undepressed soul (Bhishma) penetrated into the ranks of the Pandavas.

49. The grandsire then repulsed all those arrows as if in sport. He did not aim any shaft at the prince of the Panchalas, but laughing y looked at him now and then.

50. Remembering Sikhandin's femininity Bhishma sped not a single arrow at the former. But that mighty car-warrior then slew seven of the best car-warriors of Drupada's division.

51. Then as the Matsyas, the Panchalas and the Chedis rushed against that single-handed warrior, loud became the din and confusion that then arose.

52. Then like clouds covering the sun, all those heroes, O afflicter of foes, covered on all sides with foot-soldiers, horse-men and car-warriors and with a net-work of arrows,

53. That single-handed son of Bhagirathu, viz., Bhishma, who was then scorching the foe in battle. Then in that battle between Bhishma on one side and all the Pandava heroes on the other—battle that resembled the one between the gods and the Asuras—Kiritin placing Sikhandin in front of him began to pierce Bhishma,

Thus ends the hundred and nineteenth chapter, the prowess of Bhishma, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—Contd.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus all the Pandavas, placing Sikhandin before them and surrounding Bhishma on all sides began to pierce him in battle.

2. Then with terrible *Sataghnis*, with bludgeons, battle-axes, maces, mallets, thick short clubs, and lances, and other missiles,

3. With arrows furnished with golden wings, with darts, javelins and *Kumpanas*, with *Narachas*, *Vatsadantas*, and *Bhusundis*,

4. The Srinjayas united together began to wound Bhishma in battle. Then when his armour was shattered and he himself overwhelmed with many arrows.

5-7. Bhishma experienced no pain, pierced though he was to the very vitals. On the other hand Bhishma then appeared fearful to his enemies like the all-destructive fire at the expiration of a Yuga,—fire, whose flames were constituted by his effulgent arrows and bow, whose (friendly) gale was constituted by the vibrations of air produced by the shafts shot by him, whose heat was constituted by the clatter of his car-wheel, whose splendour was constituted by his mighty weapons, tongues by his variegated bow and fuel by the destruction of heroes. Wheeling in the midst of those car divisions, he sometimes came out of the press,

8. And sometimes again was seen to career rapidly through them. Thereafter without regarding the king of the Panchalas and Dhristaketu,

9-11. Bhishma, O ruler of men, penetrated into the very heart of the Pandava ranks. Then with arrows of excellent make and great sharpness, all capable of penetrating all kinds of armour and producing great whizz, and charged with great velocity, Bhishma pierced deeply the following six car-warriors, viz., Satyaki, Bhima, Dhananjaya the son of Pandu, Drupada, Virata, and Dhristadyumna of Prisata's race. These mighty car-warriors also resisting those sharp arrows shot by Bhishma,

12. Pierced him with force, each shooting ten arrows. Those dreadful arrows which that mighty car-warrior Sikhandin shot,

13. And which were furnished with wings of gold and whetted on stone, quickly penetrated the body of Bhishma. Thereupon the diadem-decked Arjuna waxing wroth rushed at Bhishma,

14. And placing Sikhandin before him, he cut off the bow of the latter. Then the following seven mighty car-warriors did not brook that cutting off of Bhishma's bow, warriors namely,

15. Drona, Krtavarman, Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus, Bhurisravas, Sala, Salya, and Bhagadatta.

16. These seven car-warriors waxing irascible and displaying weapons of celestial make rushed against the diadem-decked Arjuna.

17. Indeed excited to the highest pitch of fury they fell upon that son of Pandu surrounding him (with those arrows). Great

was the din that arose as they rushed against Phalguna's chariot.

18. Hearing that dreadful din, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host rushed to battle desirous of rescuing that foremost of the Bharatas, viz., Phalguna.

19. Then Satyaki, Bhimasena, Prisata's son Dhristadyumna, both Virata and Drupada, the Rakshasa Ghatatkacha,

20. The enraged Abhimanyu, all these seven warriors seized with fury and wielding variegated bows rushed to battle, at the top of their speed.

21. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, like the battle between the celestials and the Danavas, the battle between those seven car-warriors of each army raged fiercely causing the hair to stand erect.

22. In that battle, protected as he was by Dhananjaya, that excellent warrior Sikhandin, with ten shafts pierced Bhishma whose bow had been cut off.

23. He then pierced the latter's charioteer with ten shafts and with another one shaft cut off his standard. Then Ganga's son took up another bow of superior toughness.

24-25. But that again was cut off with three sharp shafts by Phalguna. Thus that scorcher of foes that son of Pandu namely Savyasachin, excited with wrath again and again cut off all the bows that Bhishma took up. Then excited with wrath in consequence of his bows being cut off and licking the corners of his mouth,

26. Bhishma took up a lance with lightness, that was capable of rending even the breasts of mountains; and inflamed with rage he hurled that lance at the car of Phalguna.

27. Beholding that lance course towards himself like the blazing bolt of Heaven, the son of Pandu took up five sharp broad-headed arrows.

28. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, inflamed with rage, Arjuna with those five arrows, splintered into five fragments that lance hurled with strength of Bhishma's arms.

29. Then shattered by the wrathful Arjuna decked with a diadem, that lance fell down like forks of lightning torn away from large masses of clouds.

30. Beholding his lance severed, Bhishma became inflamed with rage; and that hero, that subduer of hostile cities began to think with the help of his understanding thus:—

31. "I can slay even with a single bow all these Pandavas, if the highly powerful Visaksena (Krishna) be not their protector.

32. I shall not fight with the Pandavas for two reasons, viz., for the unslayableness of the Pandavas and for the femininity of Sikhandin.

33. Formerly on the occasion of his marrying Kali, my father graufied with me, accorded me two boons, viz., death at my pleasure, and unslayableness in battle.

34. I now think that the proper time for my death has arrived." A-certainly this to be the intention of Bhishma of immeasurable energy,

35. The *Rishis* and *Vasus* stationed in the firmament then thus addressed Bhishma saying—"What you have resolved upon O sire, is also our dear will.

36. Therefore, O monarch, follow up in action what you have resolved; and withdraw your heart from fight." At the conclusion of these words there began to blow an auspicious breeze,

37. Fragrant and moistened with sprinkles of water, from all directions. Celestial drums were also sounded emitting great din.

38. And, O sire, over Bhishma fell a shower of blossoms. As those *Rishis* and *Vasus* spoke, O king, none heard then

39. Save the mighty-armed Bhishma and myself through the prowess of the sage (Vyasa) O ruler of men, great was the flurry that was then found among the Gods,

40. As they thought of the fall of Bhishma, that favourite of all the worlds. Then hearing those words of the celestials, that hero of great ascetic wealth, viz.,

41. Santanu's son Bhishma assailed not Vibhatsu, although he was then being pierced by sharp shafts capable of penetrating through all armours.

42. Then, O mighty monarch, Sikhandin inflamed with wrath struck the grandsire of the Bharatas on the breast with nine shafts of great sharpness.

43. Then, O mighty monarch, Sikhandin inflamed with wrath struck the grandsire of the Bharatas on the breast with nine shafts of great sharpness.

44. Then smiling and stretching his bow Gandiva, Vibhatsu wounded Ganga's son with twenty-five short thick shafts.

45. Then again under the influence of wrath, Dhananjaya pierced him quick on all parts of his body and to the vitals, with one hundred shafts more.

46. Thus pierced by many other warriors with thousands of arrows, the mighty car-warrior Bhishma pierced them all in return quickly with his own arrows.

47. Then Bhishma of prowess, unfatigued in battle, with his own shafts of depressed knots simultaneously baffled all these arrows shot by the hostile warriors.

48. Those arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone that Sikhandin the mighty car-warrior shot at him could not produce any the slightest pain to him.

49. Thereupon inflamed with wrath the diadem-decked Arjuna placing Sikhandin before him rushed at Bhishma and cut off the latter's bow.

50. Then he pierced Bhishma with ten arrows and with another cut down the latter's standard; then with ten other arrows he caused Bhishma's charioteer to tremble.

51-52. Then that son of Ganga took up another bow of great toughness. Then in that battle, within a twinkling of the eye, Arjuna cut off with three sharp broad-headed arrows that bow as soon as it was taken up. Thus Arjuna cut off successively all the bows that the son of Ganga took up one after another.

53. Thereupon Bhishma the son of Santanu did no longer assail Vibhatsu, then the latter pierced the former with twenty-five small arrows.

54. That mighty bowman thus deeply pierced addressing Dussasana said—"This mighty car-warrior of the Pandava host, viz., Pritha's son Arjuna, inflamed with rage,

55. Is afflicting me in battle with many thousands of arrows. This one is incapable of being conquered even by the wielder of the thunderbolt.

56. Regarding me, I may say that all the heroic celestials, Danavas and Rakshasas, united together, can not vanquish me in battle, what to speak of human car-warriors?"

57. Thus when they were conversing with one another, Arjuna, placing Sikhandin before him, began to pierce Bhishma in battle with shafts of great sharpness.

58. Thus pierced with sharp arrows by the wielder of the Gandiva, Bhishma once more addressing Dussasana smilingly said:

59. "These arrows of touch resembling that of the thunderbolt, coming in an unbroken line towards me have been discharged by Arjuna. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

60. Eating into my very vitals and penetrating even through my impenetrable armour, these arrows are striking me

like so many bludgeons. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

61. Of the touch like that of a Brahmana's rod, of velocity like that of the thunderbolt and incapable of being repulsed, these arrows are sucking out my vital energies. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

62. Of touch heavy like that of a mace or a bludgeon these arrows are destroying my vital breaths like so many messengers of Death. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

63. Like infuriate snakes of virulent venom with their tongues protruding out, these arrows are penetrating into my very vitals. Surely these are not Sikhandin's.

64. These are the arrows of Arjuna and not of Sikhandin, arrows that are cutting me to the quick like the bleakness of winter cutting kine to the quick.

65. Save and except the heroic wielder of the Gandiva bow, that owner of the standard marked with the device of an ape, viz., the ever-victorious Arjuna, all the other monarchs united together can not afflict me."

66. Having thus spoken, the highly powerful Bhishma as if desirous of consuming the Pandavas, hurled at Pritha's son a (terrible) lance.

67. Thereupon with three arrows cutting that lance into three pieces, Arjuna felled it down on the ground, O Bharata, even before the very eyes of all the Kuru heroes.

68. Thereafter Ganga's son grasped a buckler of the polish of gold, as also a resplendent sword, desirous of reaping either victory or death.

69. But before he (Bhishma) could descend from his chariot, Arjuna with his shafts splintered that buckler into hundred fragments. Indeed that looked like something marvellous.

70. Thereupon, king Yudhisthira urged on his own division saying—"Assail the son of Ganga. Entertain not the slightest fear."

71. Thereupon from all sides, those troops, with darts, lances, arrows, battle-axes, excellent swords, long shafts of great sharpness,

72. With *Vatsadantas*, and broad-headed arrows, rushed against that single warrior. Then loud was the din of war-cries that rang through the Pandava ranks.

73. Similarly, O king, your sons all desirous of seeing Bhishma victorious rushed forward for rescuing that single hero, and

they also set up a mighty uproar caused by their yells and war-cries.

74. Then on that the tenth day when Bhishma and Arjuna contested with one another, fierce was the fight that raged between your soldiers and those of the enemy.

75. Then at the spot where the hostile troops clashed and smote down one another an eddy seemed to start up into existence like that occurring at the spot where Ganga meets the ocean.

76. Deluged with blood the earth then assumed a hideous aspect, and her undulations were lost to sight.

77. Having slain ten thousand warriors on that the tenth day of the fight, Bhishma stood on the field while his vitals were being pierced into by Arjuna.

78. Then Partha, holding his bow and standing at the head of his divisions, broke the Kuru ranks in the very centre of their array.

79. Then afraid of that son of Kunti viz., Dhananjaya the owner of cream-coloured steeds and afflicted with his sharp arrows, we then began to fly away from the field of battle.

80. Then the Souviras, the Kitavas, the Westerners, the Northorners and the Malavas, the Abhishahas, the Surasenas, the Sinis, the Vasatis,

81. The Salwas, Sakas, the Trigarttas, the Amvastas, the Kekayas,—all these illustrious warriors, afflicted with shafts, and pained with their cuts,

82. Did not abandon Bhishma in battle who had been fighting with the diadem-decked Arjuna. Then surrounding the single car-warrior Bhishma, large numbers of the enemy,

83. Covered him with arrow showers, having at first defeated the rest of the Kuru warriors. "Slay" "Seize" "Fight" "Cut into pieces,"

84. Such were the cries, O king, that were then heard round Bhishma's chariot. Bhishma then slaughtered his foes by hundreds and thousands.

85—86. But then there was not even a space of two fingers in all his body that was not mangled with shafts. Thus then your father, mangled with keen-pointed darts shot by Phaiguna, fell down from his car on the field with his head laid towards the East, a little before sunset before the very eyes of your sons.

87. Then at the overthrow of Bhishma loud lamentations of "Alas" and "Oh"

were heard, O Bharata, among the kings, and the celestials in the heaven.

88. Beholding the illustrious grandsire fall, we all became dejected and depressed at heart.

89. That foremost of all bowmen, that mighty-armed hero fell like an uprooted standard in honour of Indra, causing the earth tremble for the while.

90. Covered closely with arrows he did not then touch the earth's surface. Then as that mighty bowman, that foremost of all male beings lay prostrate on his arrowy bed,

91. Being overthrown from his car, a divine inspiration took possession of him. The rain-cloud Parjanya then poured down its contents and the earth quaked.

92. When falling Bhishma had marked the sun to be then on the Southern solstice and that hero considering that hour to be inauspicious for paying his debt to nature did not allow his senses to depart.

93. He then also heard divine utterance in the heaven, viz., "Why should that foremost of all wielders of weapons, Oh, why should the illustrious son of Ganga,

94. Why should that foremost of men give up his life when the sun is in the Southern solstice?" Hearing those words Ganga's son said "I am still alive."

95. Then desirous of yielding his life up during the Northern solstice, the grandsire of the Kurus, viz., Bhishma though fallen on earth still retained his vital breaths.

96. Ascertaining that to be his intention, Ganga, the daughter of the Himalayas sent great sages under the disguise of swans then to Bhishma.

97. Then those sages disguised under the forms of swans inhabiting the Manasa lake flew to the sky, and in a line came to see Bhishma, the grandsire of the Kurus,

98. At the spot where that foremost of men was lying on his arrowy bed. Then coming to Bhishma those sages under the forms of swans,

99. Beheld that perpetuator of the Kuru race, viz., Bhishma laid on his bed of arrows. Then beholding that illustrious one, and circumbulating

100. That foremost of the Bharatas, that son of Ganga, the sages, knowing the sun to be then in the Southern solstice addressing one another said:—

101. "Why should the high-souled Bhishma pass away when the sun is in the Southern solstice." Having thus spoken,

the swans flew towards the Southern directions.

102. Then that highly intelligent Bhishma beholding them and reflecting for a while said to them, "I shall not yield up my life,

103. As long as the sun will remain in the Southern solstice. This indeed is my determination, I shall repair to my own former abode,

104. When the sun will be in the Northern solstice; this, O Swans, I tell you forsooth. I shall retain my vital breaths looking anxiously forward for the Northern solstice.

105. In as much as my giving up of my life is under my thorough control, therefore shall I retain it desirous of dying during the Northern solstice.

106. The boon that my illustrious father accorded me, viz., that I shall die at my own pleasure, let that boon be true.

107. As the yielding up of my vital breaths lies entirely with me, I shall retain them." Having then thus spoken to the swans, he remained (motionless) on his arrowy bed!

108. Thus when the crest of the Kurus, viz., the highly puissant Bhishma was overthrown the Pandavas and the Srinjayas set up a loud war-cry.

109. When that grandsire of the Bharatas, possessed of great strength was overthrown, O foremost of the Bharatas, your sons knew not what to do.

110. Then the Kurus were totally confounded; and Kripa and Duryodhana and others began to wail aloud drawing long and heavy sighs.

111. With their senses deprived of their powers in consequence of grief, they remained inert and reflected for long and did not think of fighting.

112. They could not then rush against the Pandavas as if their thighs were locked and seized in a vice. When that unslayable son of Santanu, viz., Bhishma endued with great prowess was overthrown,

113. O king, the destruction of the Kuru monarch became apparent. Mangled with sharp shafts and with our foremost heroes slain,

114. And crushed completely by Savya-sachin (Arjuna), we did not then know what to do. Then obtaining victory, and a highly blessed state of existence (hereafter), the Pandavas,

115. All endued with heroisms and possessed of bludgeon-like arms, blew their

mighty conchs and, O ruler of men, the Somakas together with the Panchalas then were filled with great delight.

116. Then when thousands of drums were struck up, the highly powerful Bhishma uttered his fierce war-cries and slapped his arms.

117. On the fall of that illustrious son of Ganga, the heroic combatants of the two armies laying down their weapons, fell to thinking.

118. Some wept aloud, some ran wildly, some were overwhelmed with swoon; some then censured the life of a Kshatriya and some worshipped Bhishma.

119. The sages and the Patriarchs all applauded Bhishma. The ancestral manes of the Bharata race also began to praise him.

120. Then the highly intelligent son of Santanu, viz., Bhishma endued with great prowess, betaking himself to the Yoga taught in the Upanishadas and reiterating prayers in his mind, remained quite, anxiously looking forward for his last hour.

Thus ends the hundred and twentieth chapter, the overthrow of Bhishma, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—Contd.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How then, O Sanjaya, did my warriors fair, when they were deprived of the aid of the valiant Bhishma of god-like nature, who lived a life of celibacy for the sake of his father?

2. Even then did I regard the Kurus slain by Pandavas, when out of despise, Bhishma desisted from wounding the son of Drupada (Sikhandin).

3. Wretch that I am, I hear this day the news of my father's death. Alas, what greater amount of grief can overtake me, O Sanjaya.

4. Surely, O Sanjaya, my heart is made of the hardest adamant, in as much as, it does not burst forth at the news of Bhishma's slaughter.

5. Tell me, O you of illustrious vows, what did that foremost of the Kurus, that one ever desirous of victory namely Bhishma do, when he was overthrown in battle.

6. Oh, I can not brook even the thought of Devavrata's slaughter in battle. He, who was not formerly slain by the celestial

weapons of Jamadagni's son, alas, even he is now slain by Sikhandin the prince of the Panchalas!

Sanjaya said :—

7. Overthrown at the hour of evening, Bhishma, the grandsire of the Kurus, infused grief into the hearts of the Dhartarastras and delight in to those of the Panchalas.

8. He then lay on his arrowy bed with his skin not touching the earth. When Bhishma was overthrown from his car and when he fell on the earth's surface,

9. Loud wails of 'Alas' and 'Oh' were uttered by all creatures. When that ornament of an assembly, when that boundary-tree of the Kurus was overthrown,

10. The Kshatriyas, O king, of the two armies were all seized with panic. Beholding Santanu's son Bhishma, with his armour and standard shattered,

11. The Kurus and the Pandavas, both ceased fighting, O ruler of men; then a pall of darkness overspread the firmament, and the luminary of the day lost its effulgence.

12. On the fall of Bhishma, the son of Santanu, the earth seemed to shriek out fierce yells. *This one is the best of all the Veda-knowing sages—This one is the foremost of those conversant with the Vedas,*

13. These were the words that creatures then addressed to that foremost of men lying on his arrowy bed. "Formerly knowing his sire Santanu to be under the influence of desire, this one,

14. This foremost of men, deprived himself of the pleasure of carnal intercourse," Even thus, was the foremost of the Bharatas lying on his arrowy bed,

15. Addressed by the seers and Siddhas and Charanas. On the fall of Bhishma, the son of Santanu and the grand-sire of the Bharatas,

16. Your sons, O sire, knew not what to do; and, O Bharata, their faces became cheerless and their appearance lost all beauty and charm;

17. And they stood, ashamed and overwhelmed with bashfulness and with countenances cast down. The Pandavas on the other hand having obtained victory, and remaining the masters of the field,

18. Blew their mighty conchs decorated with net-works of gold. Then, O sinless one, when thousands of trumpets were blown giving breath to their joys,

19. We beheld, O monarch, the valiant Bhishma, that son of Kunti, dance in consequence of his ecstatic delight,

20. He then warriors possessed of great strength. A great confusion then overwhelmed the Kurus.

21. Karna and Duryodhana breathed long and heavily. When Bhishma the grandsire of the Kurus was overthrown,

22. Distressful cries of *Alas* and *Oh* arose from all directions; and all regard for every thing (life and limb) was lost. Beholding Bhishma overthrown, your son Dussasana

23. Ran at the top of his speed towards the division of Drona. Clad in mail and supported by his own division, he was commissioned by his royal brother for the protection of Bhishma.

24. Now that foremost of men went to the division of Drona, making at the same time his own troops cheerless. Beholding him approach the Kurus surrounded him,

25. Desirous, O king, of hearing what Dussasana might say. Then that descendant of the Kuru race spoke to Drona of the slaughter of Bhishma.

26. Hearing that doleful news, Drona suddenly fell down from his car, but the valiant son of Bharadwaja soon regaining consciousness,

27—28. Prevented his own troops, O sire, from fighting any longer. Beholding the Kurus desist from the fight, the Pandavas also prevented their own divisions from fighting, through messengers fiding fleet chargers. When the troops of both the armies had ceased fighting,

29. The kings doffing their armours approached Bhishma. Then hundreds and thousands of warriors giving up fighting,

30. Respectfully paid their homages, (to Bhishma) like the immortals paying homages to the creator himself. Then approaching that foremost of the Bharatas lying on his arrowy bed, all those heroes,

31. The Kurus and the Pandavas saluting him stood there. Then to those Kurus and the Pandavas who stood before him having at first saluted him,

32. The virtuous-souled son of Santanu viz., Bhishma spoke these words:—"Hail, O eminent heroes, hail, O mighty car-warriors.

33. O god-like heroes, I am indeed pleased by looking at you." Having thus addressed them, he with his head hanging down once more said:—

34—35. "My head is greatly hanging down; give me a pillow to place my head on." Thereupon the kings fetched many pillows made of fine stuff and very soft, and also excellent. But the grandsire liked

them not. Thereupon that foremost of men smiling said to those kings:—

36—37. "O kings, these pillows do not suit a hero's bed." Then beholding that foremost of men, that chief of all car-warriors in the three regions, viz., Pandu's son Dhananjaya of long arms, Bhishma addressed him saying:—"O mighty-armed Dhananjaya, my head is hanging, O son, give me a pillow that you think to be suited to this bed of mine.

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-first chapter, the withdrawal of the forces after the tenth day's fight, i. the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXII.

(BHISHMA-BADHA PARVA)—*contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then Arjuna, fixing the string on his mighty bow and saluting the grandsire and with his eyes overflowing with tears thus spoke.

2. "Command me, O foremost of the Kurus, O chief of all wielders of weapons. I am your slave, O invincible one. What, O grandsire, shall I do for you."

3. The son of Santanu then thus replied to him saying:—"My head, O sire, is hanging down. Fetch me, O foremost of the Kurus, O Phalguna, a pillow,

4. That will be suitable to my bed, and, O hero, give that to me soon. You only, O Partha, are equal to the task, you are the foremost of all the bowmen;

5. You are conversant with the duties of a Kshatriya and are endowed with keen intelligence and modesty and bravery." Then Phalguna of great might saying *yea* to his words, prepared to do what Bhishma bade him do.

6. Then taking up the Gandiva bow and shafts of close knots, and purifying them with *Mantras* and obtaining the permission of that illustrious car-warrior of the Bharatas, Arjuna,

7—8. With those sharp arrows charged with great velocity supported Bhishma's head. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, seeing that Sayyasachin had rightly divined his thought, Bhishma of illustrious soul, conversant with the essence of all things became gratified with Arjuna; and then greatly praised Dhananjaya for having given him that pillow.

9. Then, casting his glances on the Bharatas present there, Bhishma said to that descendant of the Bharatas, namely Kunti's son, that foremost of all warriors, and that enhancer of the delight of his friends.—

10. "O son of Pandu, you have indeed fetched me a pillow becoming my bed. Had you fetched me something else, I would have cursed you in rage.

11. O mighty-armed hero this indeed is the way in which a Kshatriya not transgressing his duties, should sleep on the battlefield lying on an arrowy bed."

12. Having thus spoken to Vibhatsu' he said to all the kings and princes present there, the following words.

Bhishma said :—

13. Behold you all the pillow the son of Pandu has supplied me with! I shall lie on this bed until the sun rolls back to the Northern solstice.

14—15. Those kings that will then come to me shall see me (give up my life). When the maker of the day (sun), on his swift moving car yoked with seven horses, will proceed towards the point of the compass occupied by Vaisravana, then shall I yield up my vital breaths, like a friend, bidding adieu to his dear friend.

16. O kings, dig up an entrenchment around here, mangled with hundreds of arrows as I am, I will offer my homages to the sun. You, O kings, do desist from the battle, vanishing all thoughts of hostility.

Sanjaya said :—

17. Thereafter there came several practitioners of the healing art, all well-trained and skilful in drawing out shafts, carrying with them all the necessary balms and appliances.

18. Beholding them, Ganga's son said to your son :—"Paying proper respect to these physicians, and rewarding them with money, do you dismiss them.

19. Reduced to this condition, what necessity have I of physicians? I have attained to that blessed existence that is so applauded in those that observe the Kshatriya duties.

20. As I lie on this arrowy bed, it is not indeed my duty to allow myself to be treated by these physicians. I should like, O rulers of earth, to be consumed even by these arrows."

21. Having heard those words of his, your son Duryodhana dismissed all those physicians, having honoured them duly.

22. Then the rulers of the various countries, beholding the religious firmness of Bhishma of infinite prowess, were greatly amazed.

23. Then having offered that pillow to your sire, all those kings, together with the mighty car-warriors of the Kurus and the Pandavas,

24. Again approached the illustrious Bhishma prostrate on his excellent bed of arrows. Then having saluted and three times circumambulated that illustrious one viz,

25—27. Bhishma, and having arranged for his protection, the heroes entered their respective camps, for taking rest, at the hour of sun-set, with their bodies bespattered with blood, and thoughtful and extremely pained. Then approaching, at a suitable season, the Pandavas,—those mighty car-warriors cheerfully seated together and rejoicing at the fall of Bhishma,—the mighty Madhava said these words to Yudhishthira the son of Dharma.

28. "Though good fortune, O best of the Kurus, have you attained victory, through good fortune has Bhishma, that mighty car-warrior of un-erring aim, incapable of being slain by men, been overthrown.

29. Or it may be, that having, through Destiny, obtained you that slay with your very glances for a foe, that one though conversant with the use of all weapons has been destroyed by your angry looks."

30. Being thus spoken to, the very virtuous king Yudhishthira replied to Janarddana saying—"Victory comes to a man through your grace, and defeat overtakes him through your wrath.

31. You are our sole refuge, O Krishna : You give assurances of safety to your devotees. Victory is not a marvel for those whom, O Keshava,

32. You always protect in battle, and for whose welfare you always concern yourself. Having yourself for our protector, I do not consider anything wonderful for us."

33. Thus spoken to, Janarddana smilingly replied—"Indeed, O foremost of all the rulers of earth, these are words suited to fall from your lips only."

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-second chapter, the giving of a pillow to Bhishma, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—

*Continued.***Sanjaya said :—**

1. O monarch, after the night had passed away, all the kings belonging to the Pandava and Dhartarastra hosts approached the grandsire.

2. Then all the Kshatriyas, having saluted that foremost of the Kurus, that hero prostrate on a hero's bed, that chief of all Kshatriyas, stood near him.

3. Repairing there by thousands, maidens covered the son of Santanu on all parts of his body, with pulverised sandal-wood, field-paddy, and garlands of flowers.

4. Women, old men and children, and numerous other, spectators approached the son of Santanu, like the Bhutas approaching the rising luminary of the day.

5. Trumpeteers, courtézans, mimes, actors and dancers and artizans, in crowds, repaired to that venerable grandsire of the Kurus.

6. Desisting from fight and doffing their armours and laying aside their weapons, the Kurus and the Pandavas together,

7. Approached the invincible Devavrata that subduer of foes. Then as in former days, they were friendly to one another, and addressed one another in agreeable words.

8. Then that assembly crowded with numerous Bharata kings, and ornamented by the presence of Bhishma, appeared beautiful like a conclave of the gods in the heavens.

9. And that assembly of kings paying their respects to the son of Ganga, appeared beautiful like that of the gods adoring their lord the venerable Grandsire (Brahma).

10. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, Bhishma, having overcome his pain by his patience, and afflicted with many darts, breathed like a snake.

11. His body was burning with the pain caused by the arrows stuck therein, and he was being deprived of his senses in consequence of the weapon-cuts. Beholding those kings, he then said :—"Bring me water."

12. Thereat those Kshatriyas, O king, brought many excellent viands, and jars filled with cold water.

13. Thereupon Santanu's son beholding water brought for him said :—"This day forward, O son, I will no longer use articles of human enjoyment."

14. I have passed away from the society of men, and am now lying on this bed of arrows. I am lying here expectant of the change in the courses of the sun and moon."

15. Having thus spoken, and censuring those kings with (cruel) words, Bhishma said, O Bharata :—"I desire to see Arjuna."

16. Thereupon that mighty-armed hero Arjuna approaching and saluting the grandsire stood there with palms folded, and said "What shall I do."

17. Beholding that son of Pandu stand before him with folded palms, the virtuous-souled Bhishma highly pleased, said these words to Dhananjaya :—

18. "My body is burning, and I am covered with your arrows. All the vital parts of my body are suffering extreme pain and my mouth is becoming dry."

19. Afflicted as my body is with extreme pain, give me water, O Arjuna, to drink. It is you alone, O mighty Bowman, that are capable of supplying me with proper drink now."

20. Thereupon the highly puissant Arjuna saying "yea" to Bhishma's words, mounted on his chariot. Then fixing the string to his mighty bow Gandiva, he began to stretch it.

21. Then hearing the twang of his bow and the slap of his arms that resembled the rumble of thunder, the troops and kings there, were inspired with terror.

22. Thereafter that foremost of car-warriors (Arjuna) circumambulating that prostrate chief of the Bharatas, that foremost of all wielders of weapon, viz., Bhishma,

23. And fixing on his bowstring an effulgent arrow inspired with aphorisms and identified with the Parjanya weapon, before the very eyes of all the people present,

24. Penetrated the earth a little to the right of the spot where Bhishma lay. Thereupon, there gushed out a jet of water pure and auspicious,

25. And cool and nectar-like and fraught with celestial fragrance and tastefulness. Then with that cool jet of water did the son of Pritha gratify

26. That foremost of the Kurus, viz., Bhishma of god-like achievements and prowess. Then seeing that feat of Pritha son, that resembled that of Indra himself

27. All the rulers of the earth present there, were filled with wonder. Then beholding that feat of Vibhatsu that indicated his superhuman prowess,

28. The Kurus began to shiver like kine afflicted with the chill of winter. Out of amazement the kings then began to waive their garments ;

29. And the sound of drums and the blare of conchs on all sides became deafening. Then, O king, Santanu's son, being greatly gratified, thus addressed Vibhatsu,

30. Applauding him before all the heroic rulers of earth. "O mighty-armed hero, this feat is not a marvel in respect to you, O delighter of the Kurus.

31. You have been spoken of by Narada as an ancient sage, O you of dazzling effulgence. Having the son of Vasudeva for your help-mate, you shall achieve great feats,

32. That even the lord of the celestials with his heavenly host dare not accomplish. Those that are conversant with the knowledge of every thing, regard you, O Arjuna, to be the foremost bowman among all the Kshatriyas.

33. Among all human wielders of bows, you are unrivalled ; you are the foremost of all men. As man is the foremost of all created beings of this world, as Garuda is the chief of all winged creatures,

34. As the Ocean is the chief of all reservoirs of water, as the cow is the best of all quadruped animals, as the sun is the foremost of all luminaries, as the Himavat is the chief of all mountains, as the Brahmana is the foremost of all castes, so are you the foremost of all wielders of bows.

35. The son of Dhritarastra paid no heed to the (salutary) counsel repeatedly offered by myself, by Vidura, Drona, Rama, Jarardhana and Sanjaya.

36. Reft of his reason, and like one senseless, Duryodhana then disregarded our words. Past all counsel, he shall have soon to lie on the field crushed by the might of Bhima."

37. Hearing these words of Bhishma, Duryodhana, the lord of the Kurus, became depressed at heart. Then the son of Santanu, casting his eyes on him once more said :—"Hear me, O king, renounce your wrath.

38. You have seen, even now, O Duryodhana, how the intelligent Partha created that jet of water, cool and fraught with nectarious fragrance.

39. There is none in the universe who can achieve the self-same feat. The

weapons of which the presiding deities respectively are Agni, Varuna, Soma, Vayu, Vishnu,

40. Indra, Pasupati, Parameshti, Prajapati, Dhata, Tashtra, Savita, and Vivavasu,

41. All these weapons are known to Dhananjaya only, as also to Krishna, the son of Devaki, and not to any one else.

42. This son of Pandu, O sire, is incapable of being defeated in battle, by the celestials and the Asuras united together. These are the super-human feats achieved by this illustrious hero.

43. Therefore, O monarch, let peace be soon concluded with that truthful hero that ornament of the field, accomplished in all modes of warfare.

44. As long as the mighty-armed Krishna is under his own control let, O sire, O foremost the Kurus, peace be made with this heroic sons of Pritha.

45. As still, O king, these your uterine brothers and these myriad kings here survive the battle, let peace be concluded.

46. As long as Yudhishthira does not burn down your army with his eyes flashing the fire of wrath, let peace be concluded with him, O sire.

47. As long as Nakula, Sahadeva, and Pandu's son Bhimisen, do not totally crush your army down, let peace be made with them.

48. It likes me best to see amity established between you and the heroic Pandavas. Let the war terminate with my fall. Let, O sire, peace be concluded with the Pandavas.

49. Let these words, O sinless one, uttered by me, be agreeable to you. This conclusion of peace do I consider to be beneficial to you and to your dynasty.

50. Renouncing your wrath, do you conclude peace with the sons of Pritha. Enough has already been accomplished by Bhishma. Let amity be established among you with the death of Bhishma. Let the rest (of the warriors) live! Relent, relent, O monarch!

51. Give half of your kingdom to the Pandavas. Let Yudhishthira repair to Indraprastha. Be not despised by the rulers of the earth for having brewed in testine broils. Do not, O foremost of the Kurus, attain a sinful notoriety.

52. With my passing away, let peace be enjoyed by the people ; let these kings embrace one another out of friendship.

Let father be reconciled to his son, let nephew be reconciled to his uncle; let brother be reconciled to his brother, O king.

53. If through perverted understanding, and possessed by folly, you do not listen to these reasonable words of mine, then—this I tell you for certain—you shall have to rue your folly hereinafter. Therefore let the war end here."

54. Having, out of affection, spoken these words to Duryodhana among all those kings, the son of Ganga remained silent, though his vital parts were then being consumed by those arrow-wounds, he, overcoming his agony, kept himself tranquil.

Sanjaya said—

55. Hearing these salutary and peaceful words of counsel, fraught with virtue and worldly profit, your son refused to act up to them, like a dying man refusing to take medicine.

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-third chapter, the counsel of Bhishma, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—Contd.

Sanjaya said—

1. After Bhishma the son of Santanu had ceased speaking, O mighty monarch, all the rulers of earth that had come there, went back to their respective quarters.

2. Hearing of the slaughter of Bhishma, that best of men, Vikartina's son, terrified to a certain extent, quickly came to the spot where Bhishma lay.

3. There he saw the illustrious hero lying on his arrowy bed, like the heroic lord Kartikeya lying after his birth on his bed of reeds.

4. Then the highly effulgent Vrishā (Karna), with his voice choked with tears of grief, approaching that hero lying with his eyes shut, fell at his two feet.

5. "I am Radha's son, O foremost of the Kurus, who, whenever he became the object of your sight, was looked upon with enmity by you." These were the words he then addressed to Bhishma.

6—7. Hearing those words of his, the venerable Kuru grandsire, viz., the son of Ganga, slowly looking at him with his eyes covered with film, and seeing the place to be solitary and dismissing his guards

and embracing Karna with one arm like a father embracing his son, thus affectionately addressed him saying :—

8. "Come, come, you were ever my opponent, and ever tried to outvie me. Every thing would not surely have fared well with you, had you not come here.

9. You are the son of Kunti, and not that of Radha, Adhiratha is not your father; all this, O mighty-armed one, regarding you, I have heard from Narada,

10. As also from Vyasa. All this therefore can not but be true. I tell you, O son, forsooth, that I entertain no malice against you.

11. Used to apply harsh words to you only for reducing your prowess. O you of excellent vows, you abuse the Pandavas without any reason whatsoever.

12. Your very birth was attended with transgression of virtue. Therefore is your intellect thus (perverted). In consequence of your arrogance and also association with the mean, your heart harbours malice against even the meritorious.

13. For this reason did I use harsh language against you in the assembly of the Kurus. I know your prowess in battle incapable of being borne by the foe,

14. Your devotion to the Brahman, your bravery, and your great love for deeds of benevolence. Among men there is none capable of rivaling you, O you resembling an immortal.

15. Apprehending intestine quarrels, I always applied harsh words to you. In archery, in fixing the arrows on the string, in lightness of hands, in the force of your weapons,

16. You are equal to Phalguna or the illustrious Krishna. In the city of the Kasis, O Karna, holding the bow single-handed.

17. You humiliated in battle all the other kings, for securing the bride for the king of the Kurus. Even the invincible king Jarasandha endowed with might,

18. Ever boastful in battle, could never cope with you in fight. You are devoted to the Brahmanas, you always love fair fight. In prowess and in might,

19. You certainly are equal to a celestial child, and are far-superior to men. I relinquish to-day the wrath I formerly harboured against you.

20. Human effort can never overcome Destiny. O slayer of your foes, the Pandavas are your uterine brothers.

21. O mighty-armed hero, if you desire to do what is agreeable to me, then be re-

conciled to them. O son of the Sun, let hostilities see their end at my fall. Let all kings of the earth be relieved of their burden of anxiety and dangers.

Karna said :—

22. I know all this, O mighty-armed hero; there is nothing to be doubted in what you have spoken. You speak truly, O Bhishma. I am Kunti's son, and not that of a charioteer.

23. I was however disowned by Kunti, and I have been brought up by a charioteer. Having enjoyed the wealth of Duryodhana so long, I can not venture to disappoint his hopes.

24—25. Like the son of Vasudeva who is firmly resolved to do good to the Pandavas, I also, have set at naught, O you that bestow profuse gifts to the Brahmanas, my wealth, my sons, my wife and even my own body and honour. Death resulting from disease is not, indeed, a meet end for a Kshatriya, O you of Kuru's race.

26. For the interests of Duryodhana, I have hitherto always incited the Pandavas against me; the result is inevitable and none possibly can prevent it.

27. What person ever ventures to overcome Destiny by human endeavour? Numerous portents, O grandsire, indicating the destruction of the earth,

28. Were seen and declared in the assembly by you. I perfectly know that the Pandavas and the son of Vasudeva

29. Are invincible by other men. Even with them do I propose to fight. I have firmly set my heart upon vanquishing the sons of Pandu in battle.

30. I can not, on the other hand, renounce this fierce hostility that I cherish for the Pandavas. With a joyful heart performing the duties of my order, I will fight with Dhananjaya.

31. Determined as I am to fight, it behoves you, O sire, to accord me your permission. With your permission, O hero, I intend to fight.

32. It also befits you, to forgive me any cruel word I might have uttered against you at any time, as also any act injurious to you, that I might have done, through malice or fickleness.

Bhishma said :—

33. If indeed you can not cast off the fierce hostility you have imbibed against the Pandavas, then O Karna, I accord you my permission. Fight, actuated by a desire for attaining paradise.

34. Free from wrath and malice, do you carry out the commissions of the king, to the best of your abilities and energies, and observant of the conduct of the righteous.

35. I do accord you my unqualified permission; attain what you desire to attain. Through the instrumentality of Dhananjaya, you shall attain to those (posthumous) regions that are secured by the observance of a Kshatriya's duties.

36. Casting off arrogance and depending on your own prowess and strength, engage yourself in the fight, for, what is there more desirable to a Kshatriya than a righteous battle?

37. For long and strenuously, did I strive to bring about peace. But I failed to accomplish the task; this, O Karna, I tell you forsooth.

Sanjaya said :—

38. When Ganga's son had thus spoken, the son of Radha, having saluted and propitiated the former, mounted his chariot and drove towards the pavilion of your son.

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-fourth chapter, the meeting of Bhishma and Karna, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

FINIS BHISMA PARVA.

A PROSE ENGLISH TRANSLATION
OF
THE MAHABHARATA
(TRANSLATED LITERALLY FROM THE ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT).

DRONA PARVA.

EDITED AND PUBLISHED BY
MANMATHA NATH DUTT. M.A., M.B.A.S.,
RECTOR, KESHUB ACADEMY,
*Author of the English Translations of the Ramayana, Vishnupuranam,
Srimadbhagavatam, Kamandakiya Nitisara, Bhagavat Gita
and many other works.*

CALCUTTA.
PRINTED BY H. C. DASS, ELYSIUM PRESS,
65½ BRADON STREET.

1897.

DRONA PARVA

CONTENTS.

Dronabhisheka Parva.

Vaishampayana describes the condition of Dhritarashtra and his sons. Bhishma's death. Karna comes to the Kauravas and consoles them. Karna comes to Bhishma and obtains permission for fight. Karna advises Duryodhana to make Drona their General. Drona's installation as the General. Drona's arrangement of the Kuru army. The fight between Drona and Dhristadyumna and a great slaughter of both the armies ensues. Drona is met by Dhristadyumna and Sanjaya gives a short account of it to Dhritarashtra. The fight between Sakuni and Sahadewa. Abhimanyu fights with Jayadratha. The fight between Satya and Bhima. Kumara fights with Drona. Arjuna comes to the battle-field and defeats the Kurus.—P. 1—28.

Samsaptakabaddha Parva.

Drona becomes dispirited. Arjuna fights with Trigartas and kills Sudhanwa. The Samsaptakas challenge Arjuna. Arjuna defeats them. Satyajit protects Yudhishthira and is killed by Drona. The fight between Drona and Satanika. Bhima defeats Duryodhana and kills the king Anga. Bhagadatta defeats Bhima and kills the Dasharna king. Arjuna defeats and kills the Samsaptakas. The fight between Bhagadatta and Arjuna. Krishna kills Naraka. Bhagadatta is discomfited by Arjuna. Sakuni comes to fight and is defeated by Arjuna. Nila is killed by Ashwathaman. Arjuna kills the three brothers of Karna and Satyaki defeats him who is rescued by Duryodhana and Drona. The battle ends in the evening.—P. 28—58.

Abhimanyu-baddha Parva, Pratijna Parva and Jayadratha-baddha Parva.

Drona proceeds to battle and arranges the Kuru army. Abhimanyu goes to the field and makes a great slaughter. Abhimanyu fights with various leaders of the Kuru army and defeats them. An account of Jayadratha's strength who checks all the Pandavas. Abhimanyu kills Rukmaratha, defeats Jayadratha and others. Karna enquires of Drona about the means of slaying him. According to his advice six warriors simultaneously attack him. Abhi-

manyu is killed by Dushshasana's son and the grief of the Pandavas. Vyasa consoles Yudhishthira and recites the story of Akampana. The story of Death. The story of king Silya and sixteen other kings. Yudhishthira is consoled and Vyasa goes away. Arjuna bewails and is consoled by Krishna. Arjuna promises to kill Jayadratha. Krishna consoles Subhadra. Arjuna sees a dream and obtains Pasupata weapon from Siva. Arjuna tells Yudhishthira of his dream. Arjuna asks Satyaki to protect Yudhishthira and proceeds to battle. Arjuna defeats Dushshasana and enters into the midst of the Kuru army. He passes by Drona and approaches Jayadratha. He defeats Kritavarman. The conversation between Drona and Duryodhana. Drona fights with Dhristadyumna and Satyaki. Arjuna kills Vinda and Anuvinda. Arjuna makes a tank in the battle-field and Krishna got his horses bathed there. Arjuna goes to meet Jayadratha. Drona and Duryodhana are defeated by Arjuna. Both the armies fight and the death of Kshemamurti. Somadatta's son fights with Draupadi's son. Arjuna kills Jayadratha. Yudhishthira eulogises Krishna. Drona promises to kill all the Panchalas. Duryodhana suspects Drona's sincerity.—P. 58—264.

Ghatotkacha and Drona-baddha Parva.

The fearful fight between the Panchalas and Kurus. The wonderful heroism of Duryodhana who makes a great havoc. The Pandus proceed against Drona. Drona kills Sivi. Bhima kills the prince of Kalingas, Dhruva, Jayarata, Durmada and Dushkarna. The wordy battle between Somadatta and Satyaki. The fight between Ghatotkacha and Ashwathaman who makes the former insensible and he is carried away by Dhristadyumna. Bhima kills Valluka, the ten sons of Dhritarashtra, Vrikaratha, the seven brothers of Sakuni, the five princes of Gandhara. The fight between Yudhishthira and Drona who could not kill the former. Karna promises to kill Arjuna. The fight between Karna and Arjuna and the discomfiture of the former. The fight between Dhristadyumna and Ashwathaman. The fight between Satyaki and Somadatta. The latter is

killed by the former. Krishna asks Yudhishtira not to fight with Drona. The fight between Yudhishtira and Kritavarman and the former is worsted by the latter. The fight between Ghatotkacha and Ashwathaman and the former is made insensible. The fight between Bhima and Duryodhana. The fight between Karna and Sahadeva. The fight between Virata and Salva—that between Alamvusha and Arjuna, Chitrasena and Nakula, Vrishasena and Drupada. Dushhasana defeats Prativindhya. The fight between Sakuni and Nakula. Dhristadyumna fights with Drona. Dhristadyumna kills Drumasena. Sakuni is sent to the battle-field by Duryodhana and is discomfited by Arjuna. The fight between Alamvusha and Ghatotkacha and the former is killed by the latter. The fight between Karna and Ghatotkacha. Atayudha comes to the battle-field. Ghatotkacha meets. The fight between Bhima and Alayudha. The fight between Alayudha and Ghatotkacha and the latter cuts off the former's head. Ghatotkacha makes a great slaughter of Duryodhana's army. Ghatotkacha is slain and the grief of the Pandavas. Vasudeva's joy, and he explains the cause to Arjuna. Yudhishtira's grief at the death of Ghatotkacha and Vyasa consoles him. The Pandava leaders all proceed against Drona and the fight between the two parties. Arjuna's permission to the soldiers to sleep. Drona promises to kill all the Panchalas and describes Arjuna's strength to Duryodhana. The fierce encounter between the Kurus and Pandavas. Drona kills the three grand-sons of Drupada. Drupada and Virata fall upon Drona who kills them both. Dhristadyumna's promise to kill Drona on that very day. Bhima and Dhristadyumna attack Drona's army. The fierce fight between the leaders of both the parties. The encounter between Karna and Bhima, and that between Drona and Arjuna. Dushhasana is defeated by Dhristadyumna. The fight between Kritavarman and his three brothers and Dhristadyumna, Nakula and Sahadeva. Dhristadyumna attacks Drona and Duryodhana proceeds to the rescue of the latter. Satyaki attacks Duryodhana. Arjuna falls upon the Kurus and Drona upon the Panchalas. Krishna advises Pandavas to kill Drona by unfair means. Arjuna does not accept the advice. Bhima

kills an elephant by name Ashwathaman and informs Drona of the death (of his son) Ashwathaman. Drona does not believe him. Drona kills the Panchalas by means of Brahma weapon. Drona asks Yudhishtira about the truth of the report. Krishna requests Yudhishtira to save his army by speaking an untruth. Bhima also requests him to do the same. Yudhishtira does the same and Drona's dejection. The fight between Drona and Dhristadyumna. Dhristadyumna urged by Bhima cuts off Drona's head. The Kurus fly away at the sight of Drona's death. Kripa informs Ashwathaman of Drona's death who promises to kill the Pandavas and Panchalas. An account of the Narayana weapon. Yudhishtira's address to Arjuna who speaks of their unrighteousness and Bhima vindicates it.—P. 260—346.

Narayanastra-Mokshana Parva.

Dhristadyumna ridicules Satyaki and the latter falls upon him. A reconciliation is brought about with great difficulty by Krishna and Yudhishtira. Aswathaman kills the Pandava army and invokes the Narayana weapon. Krishna advises the Pandavas to throw down their arms—that being the only means to pacify the Narayana weapon. They all agree except Bhima who promises to fight with Aswathaman. Bhima is stupified. Arjuna and Krishna get down from the car and make Drona to give up his arm. The Narayana weapon is pacified. Duryodhana asks Aswathaman to use the same weapon again, but he expresses his inability to use it for the second time. The fight between Aswathaman and Satyaki. Kripa, Karna, Duryodhana, Dushhasana and Vrishasena all proceed against Satyaki. Satyaki is rendered insensible by Aswathaman. A dreadful combat between Bhima and Aswathaman. Aswathaman invokes the fiery weapon. Arjuna baffles it. Aswathaman asks Vyasa about the cause of the failure of his weapon. He recounts the history of Narayana. Aswathaman hearing it, retires from the battle field. Arjuna meets Vyasa and enquires him about the invisible person who helped him on the day of Jayadratha's death. Vyasa says that he was Mahadeva. Mahadeva's spoiling Daksha Yajna. An account of Mahadeva.

THE MAHABHARATA

(IN ENGLISH)

DRONA PARVA.

CHAPTER I.

DRONABHISHEKA PARVA.

Having saluted the Supreme Deity (Narayana) and the highest of all male beings Nara and also the Goddess of Learning (Sarasvati), let us cry "Success"!

Janamejaya said :—

1—2. Hearing that his sire Devavrata of unequalled might, energy, Aurdiness, prowess and vigour, had been slain by Sikhandin the son of Panchala, O Brahminical sage, what did the very powerful monarch Dhritarastra with eyes blinded with fast-falling tears, do?

3. His son, O worshipful one, desired to obtain monarchy after having defeated the mighty warriors, the sons of Pandu, through the assistance of Bhishma, Drona, and other such heroes.

4. O illustrious ascetic, tell me all that the foremost of the Kuru dynasty did, when that chief of all bowmen (Bhishma) had been killed.

Vaishampayana said :—

5. Having heard that his sire (Bhishma) had been slain in battle, that ruler of men, Dhritarastra of the Kuru dynasty knew no rest of mind, being worn out with anxiety and sorrow.

6. When that foremost of the Kurus had been thus brooding over his grief, there came again to him the pure-souled son of Gāvalgani.

7. O great king, Dhritarastra, the son of Ambika, then thus questioned Sanjaya who had that night returned from the camp to the city named after the elephant.

8. Hearing of the death of Bhishma, he became exceedingly cheerless, and longing for the victory of his sons, he broke out into lamentations like one sorely distressed.

Dhritarastra said :—

9. O son, having bewailed the high-souled Bhishma of terrific might, what did the Kurus, goaded by Destiny, do?

10. When that unconquerable and high-souled hero was slain, what, for sooth, did the Kurus, deep down into the sea of sorrow, do?

11. Verily, O Sanjaya, the innumerable and excellent army of the high-souled sons of Pandu, can strike the worlds with keenest apprehension.

12. Therefore, O Sanjaya, recount to me what the kings did, when Devavrata, the foremost of the Kurus, had been slain.

Sanjaya said :—

13. Hear, O monarch, with singleness of mind, the words, falling from my lips, regarding what your sons did when Devavrata had fallen.

14—15. O monarch, when Bhishma of invincible prowess had been slain, your own warriors and also those of the Pandava host, began to think of the duties of the Kshatriya sect; and, O lord of men, at the thought, they wondered and were delighted; and in obedience to their sectarian duties, they bowed down to the illustrious Bhishma.

16. Then those foremost of men prepared for Bhishma of infinite energy a bed furnished with a pillow, made of close-knotted arrows.

17—18. Having arranged for Bhishma's safety and having greeted one another, and with the permission of the son of Ganga and having circumambulated him and looking at each other with eyes coppy with anger, those Kshatriyas, goaded by Destiny, again issued forth for fighting with one another.

19. Then to the voice of the trumpets and to the roar of the drums, the army of your sons and that of their adversaries, formed in battle-array.

20-21. When, O greatest of kings, the son of Janhavi (Bhisma) had fallen and when the greater part of the day had worn out, these foremost of the Bharata race, overpowered by the influence of their wrath, and having their reasons bewildered through fate, and neglecting the salutary counsel of the illustrious son of Ganga, came out in haste grasping their weapons.

22. Owing to your own foolishness and that of your sons, and owing to the death of the son of Santanu, the descendants of the Kuru race together with all the (assembled) kings, appeared to be summoned by the God of death.

23. Like a herd of goats without a herdsman in a wood infested with beasts of prey, they were exceedingly oppressed with fear, being deprived of Devavrata.

24. On the fall of that foremost of the Bharata race, the army of the Kurus resembled the heavenly dome stripped of the stars, or the sky deprived of the atmosphere;

25. Or the earth with her crops blighted; or a discourse teeming with unfinished expressions, or the army of the Asuras when in the days of yore, Vali had been (thoroughly) humiliated,

26. Or a charming lady deprived of her lord; or a stream the waters of which had been dried up, or a doe deprived of her mate, surrounded by wolves in the forests,

27. Or the wide, extended, mountain-cave having its lion slain by the fabulous Sarava. Or the slaughter of Janhavi's son, O foremost of the Bharata race, the army of the Bharatas

28. Resembled a tiny bark thrown up and down on the bosom of the mighty main, driven by the gale-rushing from all sides. It was then greatly harassed by the powerful Pandava heroes of infallible aims.

29. Then that host, with its elephants, horses and car-warriors, was much distressed, and exceedingly jeopardised and rendered helpless and terror-stricken.

30. Then, in that army, bereft of Devavrata, the kings and the (common) soldiers, individually struck with panic, seemed to be sinking into the nethermost regions.

31. Thereafter the Kouravas remembered Karna, who was equal to Devavrata himself, and who was the foremost of all wielders of weapons, and resplendent like a guest.

32. Then like the heart of a distressed person looking for a friend, their hearts turned towards him (Karna); and, O Bharata, the kings then broke out into exclamations saying, "O Karna, O Karna."

33-35. "That son of Radha, that benefactor of ours, that progeny of Suta, he that will sacrifice his life in battle, that one of illustrious renown with his followers and friends, has refrained from fighting these ten days; summon him without delay. That foremost of men, that hero of mighty arms, Karna, had been reckoned by Bhisma as only an *Ardharatha*, in the presence of all the Kshatriyas, during the tale of car-warriors of valour and prowess, in spite of his being equal to two *Maharathas*.

36. Indeed in that enumeration of *Rathas* and *Atirathas*, Karna was thus reckoned,—Karna who is the foremost (of all fighters), who is held in high respect by the heroes, and who would dare give battle even to Yama, Kuvera, Varuna, and Indra.

37. Out of wrath (excited by this classification of himself) he had thus addressed, O king, the son of Ganga:—"O Kourava, I will not fight so long as you live;

38. If you shall slay in battle the sons of Pandu, O you of Kuru's race, I will retire into the woods with the permission of Duryodhana.

39. If, O Bhisma, on the contrary, you, being slain by the Pandavas, are transported to heaven, then will I, riding on a single car, slay those whom you consider to be the mightiest of all car-warriors."

40. Having thus spoken, the mighty-armed Karna of illustrious renown, refrained, with the permission of your son, from taking part in the battle for these ten days."

41. O Bharata, Bhisma of immeasurable prowess, displaying his might in battle, slew a large number of warriors of the Pandava host in that (sanguinary) engagement.

42. On the fall of that most powerful hero of unerring aim, your sons remembered Karna, like persons desirous of crossing (the ocean) remembering a raft.

43. Your sons and the warriors of your party, together with the (assembled) monarchs then, began to bewail saying 'Karna' they also said 'It is time for you to come.'

44. As during emergencies the heart flies to a friend, so our hearts then flew to Karna of irrepressible manhood who had acquired his knowledge of weapons from the son of Jamadagni.

45. O monarch, he only was capable of saving us from the great dangers of battle.

like Govinda always protecting the celestials from all calamities.

Vaisampayana said :—

46. Thereupon breathing (heavily) out like a snake, Dhritarastra spoke these words to Sanjaya who had been thus repeatedly extolling Karna.

Dhritarastra said :—

47. As your heart then were drawn towards Karna, the son of Vikartana, you surely saw that son of Radha, that descendant of Suta, who was ever-ready to lay down his life for you.

48. Did that Karna, of infallible prowess in battle, disappoint Duryodhana and his brothers, who had been all exceedingly distressed, panic-struck and anxious for being extricated from their difficulties?

49. Was that foremost of bowmen in battle capable of filling up the void created by the fall of Bhishma, the shelter of the Kurus?

50. Supplying the gap, was Karna successful in striking terror into the hearts of the enemy? Did he also succeed in fructifying the hopes of victory cherished by my sons?

Thus ends the first chapter, the questions of Dhritarastra, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER II.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Adhishatha's son of the Suta caste, knowing that Bhishma had fallen, became desirous of saving, like a brother, the army of your son from the calamity it was in, like a boat split in the midst of the unfathomable deep.

2. Having heard that the son of Santanu, that foremost of men, the never-dropping one, and the best of all car-warriors, had been slain, O king, Karna the representer of enemies and the foremost of all bowmen, speedily arrived at the field of battle.

3. When that excellent of car-warriors, Bhishma had been slain by the enemy, Karna soon (came to the battle field), desirous of saving the army of your son resembling a boat sunk in the deep, like a father anxious for rescuing his sons.

Karna said :—

4-5. When that Bhishma, who was endowed with resoluteness, intelligence, prowess, energy, truthfulness, self-control, and with all the other attributes of a hero; who was proficient in the use of celestial weapons; in whom there were humility, bashfulness, sweet speech and harmlessness, who was always grateful, the slayer of the enemies of the twice-borns; in whom there resided all these virtues for ever like the stain in the moon,—when even that Bhishma the destroyer of hostile heroes had obtained his quietus, I consider the remaining warriors as already slain.

6. Owing to the constant connection with action, there is nothing in this world that is eternal. When that one of illustrious vows (Bhishma) has been killed to-day, what man can say with certitude that to-morrow the sun will rise?

7. When that one of prowess equal to that of the Vasus, when he that was born of the energy of the Vasus, when that ruler of earth has gone back to the Vasus, do you then lament for your wealth, your sons, and this army?

Sanjaya said :—

8. When that giver of boons, that most puissant hero, that lord of men, that one of great vigour had been slain, and when the Bharatas had been vanquished, Karna, with a sorrowful heart, and shedding copious tears, began to comfort (the Kurus).

9. Having heard, O monarch, these words of the son of Radha, your sons and your soldiers, out of grief, broke out into loud lamentations and shed tears from their eyes, which were as copious as their wails were loud.

10. When the sanguinary engagement waged anew and the Kourava host led by kings once more roared forth (their battle-cry), then that foremost of all Maharathas (Karna) addressed these words to the mighty car-warriors, that imparted joy to their hearts.

11. "This transient world is ever flying (towards death), considering this I always regard everything as unsteady. When you were all present here, how could that foremost of the Kurus (Bhishma), who resembled a mountain in steadiness, be slain in battle?

12. When like the sun dropping down on the earth, that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Santanu has fallen, the monarchs (of the Kuru army) are hardly capable of withstanding Dhananjaya, like trees unable

to withstand the hurricane that uproots even the hills.

13. As that high-minded one did, so to-day will I protect, in this dreadful battle, this army of the Kurus, whose appearance is cheerless and whose zeal has been destroyed by the enemy, which is helpless, and whose best warriors have already been slain.

14. This heavy burden now devolves on myself; I see that this world is transitory. That most excellent of warriors has also fallen in battle. Why shall I then entertain any apprehension for fighting?

15. Coursing (swiftly) in the battle-field, I shall send, by means of my straight-going shafts, to the abode of Death, the foremost descendants of Kuru's race (Pandavas). Considering fame to be the best of all worldly possessions, I shall kill them in the engagement, or myself lie on the field being slain by them.

16. Yudhishthira is endued with resoluteness, intelligence, piety and vigour, Virikodara equals a hundred elephants in might, Arjuna also is youthful and the begotten son of the foremost of celestials, so the army belonging to them is not to be easily vanquished even by the immortals.

17. As no one ever returns alive from the jaws of death, so no coward ever returns (alive) after having confronted that hostile army to which belong the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva), each resembling Death himself in battle, and in which are Satyaki and the son of Devaki.

18. Great power, begot of austerities, should be opposed by ascetic wealth. So should the wise oppose might with might. My mind is decided upon withstanding the enemy and it is resolutely fixed upon ensuring the safety (of my own troops.)

19. For certain, O charioteer, I shall to-day oppose their force, and shall defeat them by simply going to the field. This conflict of friends (internecine war) ought not to be tolerated by me. He that helps in rallying a routed army is the true friend.

20. I shall either achieve this pious act of manliness or shall follow Bhishma, renouncing my vital breaths. I shall either slay in battle my myriad enemies, or slain by them I shall attain to the posthumous regions of the heroes.

21. I regard, indeed, this to be my bounden duty, O charioteer, when women and infants wail aloud for assistance, and when Dhritarashtra's pride has been humiliated. So I shall this day conquer the enemies of the monarch (Duryodhana).

22. Preserving the Kurus and massacring the sons of Pandu even at the cost of my very life in this dreadful fight, and despatching to Death my myriad enemies in this battle, I shall bestow this monarchy on the son of Dhritrashtra.

23. Fasten on me this magnificent, golden and resplendent armour radiant with gems and jewels. Let also my helmet lustrous like the sun and my bows and arrows resembling fire, poison or serpents, be donned.

24. Fasten sixteen quivers (to my chariot), fetch strongest bows and also arrows, spears, heavy maces, and my conch with its body variegated with gold.

25. Procure also my standard, variegated, beautiful, magnificent, made of gold, burning with the lustre of a lotus, bearing the emblem of the elephant's girth, after having cleansed it with a fine piece of cloth, and having decorated it with festoons of flowers and a net-work of fine wires.

26. O son of a charioteer, bring me also, in all haste, fleetest horses of the colour of of tawny clouds stout, washed with water hallowed by Mantras, and decorated with rich caparisons made of effulgent gold.

27. Procure, in all haste, a chariot, most magnificent, festooned with garlands of gold, adorned with gems resembling the Sun and the Moon, furnished with all necessary objects and offensive weapons, and yoked with lusty horses.

28. Bring me also beautiful bows of great toughness and bow-strings of finest make, capable of throwing (arrows at great distances), and some large quivers well-stuffed with shafts and several cuirasses (to cover my person).

29. O hero, bring speedily all auspicious articles required at the time of setting out (for battle), and brass and golden vessels filled with curds. Bring garlands of flowers and decorate my person with them, strike up, also, kettle-drums for victory.

30. Drive, O charioteer, quickly thither where Keeritin (diadem-decked), Virikodara, the virtuous Yudhishthira and the twins are. Confronting them, either I shall slay them, or being slain in battle by my foes, I shall follow Bhishma.

31. That host to which belongs, Yudhishthira, firm in truth, in which are Bhima and Arjuna, and which contains the son of Vasudeva, Satyaki and the Srinjayas, that host I consider to be incapable of being vanquished by these monarchs.

32. Even if all-devouring Death were to guard Arjuna in the encounter, with the utmost heed, still would I slay him, con-

fronting him in battle; or myself hie to the regions of Death following the trail of Bhishma.

33. It is not that, I say, that I shall not go amidst those heroes. Those that sow dissensions among friends, that are of veering devotion and of impious souls, those are not my allies.

Sanjaya said:—

34. Karna then drove out for victory, mounting on an excellent chariot, most lavishly furnished, invulnerable, with a magnificent pole, adorned with gold, auspicious, with (fluttering) pennons, and to which were harnessed steeds fleet like the wind.

35—36. Worshipped by the best of the car-warriors of the Kuru party, like Indra by the immortals, that high-souled and most terrible of all wielders of bow, endowed with immeasurable vigour like the sun himself,—riding on his chariot decorated with gold, gems and jewels, mounted with a magnificent standard, to which were harnessed finest animals and the rattle of which resembled the rumbling of clouds,—went, attended by a mighty host, to the battlefield where that foremost of the Bharata race (Bhisma) had obtained his quietus.

37. Then that son of Adhiratha, the mighty Bowman and warrior Karna, blessed with a handsome appearance and effulgent like fire, riding on his own auspicious chariot resplendent like fire, shone like the monarch of the celestials himself riding on his own heavenly chariot.

Thus ends the second chapter, the setting out of Karna, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER III.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—Contd.

Sanjaya said:—

1—8. Seeing the most worshipful champion, the high-souled grandsire Bhishma of immeasurable prowess, the death of all Kshatriyas, lie on a bed of arrows and resemble the mighty main dried by violent storms, and seeing that hero dragged down from his car by the celestial weapons of Savayasachin, (Arjuna), the hope your sons cherished for victory was gone as also their armours and peace of mind. Seeing that one who was always like an island to persons going down into the unfathomable deep in their attempt to cross it, seeing him pierced with shafts that had flown in an uninterrupted stream like that of the Yamuna,

him who appeared like the unbearable Mainaka hurled on the earth by Mahendra; seeing that hero fallen on the surface of the earth like the sun dropped down from the heavens; seeing him who resembled the unconquerable Vritra when he had been vanquished in the days of yore by Vasava; seeing that stupifier of the consciousness of all heroes, that most excellent of champions, that foremost of all bowmen; seeing that hero and foremost of men, your father Bhishma of illustrious vows, that grandsire of the descendant of the Bharatas thrown down and lying prostrate on the field, pierced through and through by the arrows of Arjuna; seeing that hero resting on a couch worthy of a hero,—the son of Adhiratha dismounted from his chariot, greatly distressed and overwhelmed with grief and with his consciousness well-nigh clouded.

9. He (Karna) walked towards him (Bhisma) on foot, distressed and with eyes blinded with fast-falling tears. Then saluting him and folding his palms and having paid his respects, Karna thus spoke.

10. "I am Karna; good betide you; speak to me, O Bharata, in auspicious and sweet language, turn your eyes on me.

11. None can expect to reap the fruits of his meritorious deeds here, since you, O venerable pious old man, lie prostrate on the ground being slain (by your enemies).

12. In replenishing the treasury, in matters of counsel, in arranging troops for battle, and in the handling of arms, I do not, O foremost of the Kurus, find any one else among the Kurus equal to you.

13. I do not see any one else that endowed with a pure intelligence, will save the Kurus from their terror. Having slain numerous warriors, you are now repairing to the regions of the Pitris.

14. O foremost of the Bharatas, from this day forward, the sons of Pandu possessed with ire, will slay the Kurus, as tigers slaughter deer.

15. To-day the Kurus will realise the vigour of Savayasachin, who produces the twang of the Gandiva bow; to-day they will be frightened by him as the Acuras were frightened by the wielder of the thunder-bolt.

16. To-day the whizz, resembling the rumble of thunders, of arrows shot from the Gandiva, will strike terror in the hearts of the Kurus and other rulers of earth.

17. O hero, to-day the shafts of the diamond-decked Arjuna, will burn down the sons of Dhritarastra, just as a swelling

forest-conflagration of terrible flames burns down the trees.

18. Fire and wind coursing together, consume numerous copses, creepers and trees in that part of a forest through which they pass.

19. There can be no doubt that the son of Pritha is like a raging fire; and, O foremost of men, without doubt Krishna resembles the strong wind (that accompanies fire).

20. Hearing the sound of the conch *Panchajanya* and the twang of the bow *Gandiva*, all the soldiers will be terror-stricken.

21. O hero, bereft of you, the monarchs will not be able to bear the rumble of the advancing chariot mounted with the banner having for its emblem the (terrible) ape, that belong to that represser of foes (Arjuna).

22. What other monarch, except yourself, is capable of combating with Arjuna, all whose super-human deeds the wise extol.

23. Superhuman was indeed the combat he had with the high-souled *Iryamvaka* (the three-eyed god). From him did he (Arjuna) secure a boon which is difficult of being obtained by the mean-minded.

24—25. That son of Pandu ever boastful of his prowess is protected by Madhava. What other person can overcome him in battle who could not be vanquished even by you before,—you who, endowed with great prowess, had defeated in battle, Rama, that terrible destroyer of the Kshatriya race, held in high honour by the celestials and the Asuras.

26. With your permission I, as I am unable to tolerate him any longer, can to-day slay, with the dint of my weapons, that son of Pandu, that foremost of warriors in battle who is like a serpent of virulent venom, and is terrible, heroic and capable of slaying his enemies even by his very glances.

Thus ends the third chapter, the eulogy of Karna, in the *Dronabhiseka* of the *Drona Parva*.

CHAPTER IV.

(DRONABHISEKA PARVA) *Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. When he had been thus speaking, the venerable grandsire of the Kurus, pleased with him, addressed to him these words suitable to season and place.

2—3. "May you be the refuge of your friends, even as the ocean is the refuge of the rivers, the sun of the other planets, the pious of the truth, fertile soil of the seeds, and *Parjanya* of the created beings. May your relations depend on you even as the immortals depend upon the thousand-eyed *Indra*.

4. May you be the humiliator of the pride of your enemies; and may you be the enhancer of the delight of your friends, the Kouravas, as *Vishnu* is of the denizens of heaven.

5. O Karna, ever anxious to perform the pleasures of the son of *Dhritarashtra*, you, with the strength and vigour of your arms, did defeat the *Kambojas*, having gone to their country, namely *Rajapura*.

6. You also vanquished the monarchs who was stopping at *Girivraja* and who was headed by *Nagnajita*, as also the *Amvasthas*, the *Vidahas* and the *Gandharvas*.

7. O Karna, in days gone by, you brought under the authority of *Duryodhana* the *Kiratas* obstinate in battle and peopling the strongholds of the *Himavat*.

8. The *Utkalas*, the *Mekhalas*, the *Poundras*, the *Kalingas*, the *Nishadhas*, the *Trigartas*, and the *Valhikas*, were also worsted in battle by you.

9. O Karna, desirous of doing good to *Duryodhana*, you defeated in battle in various lands, O hero, numerous highly vigorous clans.

10. May you, O son, be the shelter of all the Kouravas, even as *Duryodhana* is, with his friends, relatives and kinsmen.

11. I do bid you farewell in benedictory language, go, and fight with the enemy; command the Kurus in battle, and secure victory for *Duryodhana*.

12. Like *Duryodhana*, you are to us our grandson. Therefore, by the ordinances, we are the same to you as we are to him.

13. O foremost of men, the intelligent hold that in this world the connection of the pious with the pious is more closer in respect of relationship than that through the uterus.

14. Therefore being faithfully united with the Kurus, and believing their army to be your own, do you, like *Duryodhana* himself, protect it.

15. Having heard these words of him (*Bhisma*) and having bowed down to his feet, Karna, the son of *Vikartana*, went to the place where all the bowmen were assembled.

16. Beholding that matchless and extensive encampment of the innumerable army,

Karna encouraged that host of well-accommodated and broad-chested soldiers.

17—18. All the Kurus, having Duryodhana at their head, were greatly delighted; and seeing that mighty-armed and high-souled Karna come with the intent of battle and place himself at the command of the whole host, the Kurus welcomed him, with sounds produced by the striking of the arm-pits, with rending shouts, twang of bow-strings, roars like that of lions and diverse other kinds of sounds.

Thus ends the fourth chapter, the consolation afforded by Karna, in the Drona-bhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER V.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—Contd

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, seeing that foremost of men Karna seated on his car, Duryodhana highly enraptured, spoke these words.

2. "I consider this army, protected by you, to have found a suitable commander in you. Do you now decide that which will be beneficial (to this army) and which is practicable."

Karna said :—

3. O foremost of men, yourself speak to us, since you are the wisest of kings. A third person cannot so well desecrate as to what should be done, as he who is interested in any affair.

4. All these rulers of men are desirous of hearing your words; and I am sure you will never speak unjust words.

Duryodhana said :—

5. Owing to his prowess, seniority, knowledge of the Srutis, and the support he obtained from all the warriors, he (Bhisma) was the leader of our host.

6. In the fair battle of these ten days that highly glorious one of generous soul, O Karna, slew a large number of my foes and protected my own army.

7. When that one, who accomplished many difficult acts, is gone to heaven, O Karna, whom do you consider capable of leading (this host into battle)?

8. Like an unmanned boat in waters, the army cannot stand in battle even for a short while without a leader, O Karna, O you who are foremost in battle.

9. An army without a commander is like a boat with none to steer her through, or like a chariot without a driver, going any where.

10. Just as a foreign trader in an unknown country reaps all distress, so an army without a commander is exposed to all dangers.

11. Therefore do you look among all these high-souled warriors of ours and find out a proper person who may, as a commander, fill the place of Santanu's son.

12. The person, whom you will consider to be fit to lead our army, in battle, will undoubtedly be chosen to be so unanimously,

Karna said :—

13. All these foremost of men of high soul are worthy of the leadership (of this host). There is no necessity for making any selection.

14. All of them are perfectly acquainted with the genealogies (of princes) and with the vital parts of the body, they are possessed of prowess, might and intelligence; they are grateful, highly intelligent and ever unretreating from battle.

15. But all of them cannot at the same time assume the leadership, therefore only one among them is to be chosen, in whom there reside superior qualities.

16. If you promote one among several contending rivals, the rest, it is clear, being depressed, will not fight with a desire for doing your good.

17. But this foremost of all the wielders of weapons, this preceptor and teacher, of all the warriors, this Drona who is venerable in years, is worthy of being elected generalissimo.

18. When the indomitable Drona, who is foremost among those conversant with Brahma and is equal to Suka and Angirasa in learning, is here, who else is worthy of being selected as a leader?

19. O Bharata, there is not even a single warrior among this mighty host of kings, who will not follow Drona when he goes to fight.

20. O monarch, this one is the foremost of all leaders of warriors; he is the foremost of all wielders of arms, as also of all intelligent persons, and he is also your preceptor (in arms).

21. As the immortals desirous of defeating the Asuras in battle made Kartikeya their leader, so, do you, O Duryodhana,

soon elect this one (Drona) as the leader of your army.

Thus ends the fifth chapter, the counsel of Karna, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER VI.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thereupon having listened to the words of Karna, king Duryodhana thus addressed Drona who was standing in the midst of the soldiers.

Duryodhana said —

2—3. Amongst all this numerous host of kings, there is none who can be as good a protector as you, owing to the superiority of the order to which you belong, to the nobility of your birth, to your knowledge of the Sastras, your age, your intelligence, prowess, skillfulness, invincibility, perfect acquaintance with worldly matters, moral purity, self-control, asceticism, seniority, and gratefulness, as also owing to your being endued with all desirable qualities.

4. Like Indra protecting the celestials, do you protect ourselves. O foremost of the twiceborn ones, being led by yourself, we desire to obtain victory over our enemies.

5. Like Kapala amongst the Rudras; like Pavaka amongst the Vasus, like Kuvera amongst the Yakshas; like Vasava amongst the Marutas;

6. Like Vasistha amongst the Vipras, like Bhaskara (sun) amongst the lustrous bodies, like Yama amongst the Pitris, like Varuna amongst the creatures of the waters;

7. Like the moon amongst the stars, like Usanas amongst the sons of Diti, you are the foremost amongst all commanders of armies; therefore be you our leader.

8. Like Indra slaying the Danavas, do you slay our enemies, O sinless one, by arranging in battle-array this eleven Akshauhini of soldiers which will be placed under your complete disposal.

9. Like the son of Pavaka proceeding before the celestials, do you proceed at the head of this our army; we will follow you in battle like a herd of bulls following the leader.

10. That fierce bowman, that mighty champion, Arjuna, stretching his celestial

bow, will not strike us seeing you go before us.

11. O foremost of men, if you accept our leadership, then I am sure to conquer in battle Yudhishtira with all his friends and followers.

Sanjaya said:—

12. When Duryodhana had finished his address, the kings, imparting great delight to your sons by their loud defiant shouts, exclaimed "Victory to Drona."

13. Then the soldiers also filled with delight, and desirous of earning fame, began to extol that foremost of regenerate ones, with Duryodhana at their head. Thereupon, O monarch, Drona spoke these words to Duryodhana.

Thus ends the sixth chapter, the request of Duryodhana, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER VII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Drona said:—

1. I am versed in the Vedas and in their six auxiliaries; and in the science of practical life concerning itself with men. I know the weapons of Tryamvaka and various other weapons and Mantras.

2. Those qualities,—which, you, desirous of victory, have ascribed to me, bringing them to play, I will offer battle to the sons of Pandu.

3. But, O monarch, I shall never slay the son of Prisata in battle; O foremost of men, he has been created to kill me.

4. I shall encounter the hostile array and kill the Somakas. In battle, the Pandavas will not meet me with delighted hearts.

Sanjaya said:—

5. O monarch, then your son, with the permission of Drona, made him the commander of his troops, with ceremonies enjoined by the ordinances for such occasions.

6. As in days of yore, the gods with Indra at their head, invested Skanda with their leadership, so now did the monarchs headed by Duryodhana, invest Drona with the command of the troops.

7. Thereupon on Drona's investiture with the command, the delight (of troops) was manifest by the sound of musical instruments and the deafening blast of the conchs.

8.—9. Then honouring Drona with shouts the like of which fill the ear during a holy day, with sounds of benedictory utterances, with eulogies, songs, and cries of bards, minstrels and panegyrists, with the cries of victory uttered by the foremost of regenerate ones, and with the frolics of mimes, the Kouravas considered the sons of Pandu as already worsted in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

10. Then having been installed on the command of the army, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Varadwaja, arranging the troops in battle-array, marched out, accompanied by your sons, from a desire of giving battle.

11. Donning their armours, the king of the Shindhus, and the Kalingas, and Vikarna, your son, stationed themselves in the right wing of Drona.

12. Then accompanied by a numerous and picked cavalry recruited from men belonging to the Gandhara tribe and armed with lustrous lances, Sakuni marched out as their support.

13. Then Kripa, Kritavarman, Chakrasena, and Vivinsati, having Dussasana at their head, proceeded, covering the left wing.

14. Then riding on horses of great fleetness, the Kambojas headed by Sudakshina, and the Sakas with the Yavanas, marched forth, forming the support of the last mentioned party.

15.—17. Then the Madras, the Trigartas, the Amvasthas, the warriors from the West and the North, the Malavas, the Sivas, the Surasenas, the Sudras with the Malavas, the Souviras, the Kitavas, the warriors from the East and the South,—all these with your son Duryodhana at their head, and the son of Suta at their rear, cheering the hearts of their own partisans, marched forth, and increased the strength of the (advancing) troops. Karna, the son of Vikartana, then marched at the head of all bowmen.

18. His mighty standard, huge and resplendent, and marked with the device of the elephant's girth, imparting delight into the hearts of his own soldiers, burned with effulgence equal to that of the sun.

19. All the kings and the Kurus, seeing Karna, did pay no heed to the calamity that had befallen them in the shape of Bhishma's death, and they all were shorn of their sorrow.

20. Numerous warriors, highly delighted, forming into groups, thus began to talk, "Surely the Pandavas, seeing Karna in the field, will not stay a while in battle,

21. Truly, Karna is powerful enough to gain victory in battle over the celestials led by Vasava himself, not to speak of the sons of Pandu, who are devoid of prowess and energy alike.

22. The sons of Pritha were tenderly treated by the mighty-armed Bhishma in battle. But Karna shall slay them in the encounter with sharpened arrows."

23. O lord of people, thus talking to one another with joyful looks, and honouring and eulogising the son of Radha, they marched along (in battle-array).

24. Our own army, O monarch, was arrayed in the form of a *Sakata* (or car); and the army of our high-souled enemies, O Bhishma, was formed in the shape of a *Krouncha* (crane),

25.—27. By the very virtuous Yudhisthira with a delighted heart. At the head of their array stood the two foremost of men, Visaksena (Vishnu) and Dhananjaya, with their banner, bearing the emblem of the ape, uplifted. That banner of Partha of immeasurable prowess, the hump of the whole army and the refuge of all wielders of bow, that banner which reached the orbit of the sun, seemed to illumine the whole army of Yudhisthira of high soul.

28. That banner of the most intelligent Partha appeared like the burning sun when at the end of a Yuga, it rises to consume the earth.

29. Of all the warriors Arjuna is the foremost; of all the bows Gandiva is the best. Vasudeva is the foremost of all created beings, and Sudarsana is the best of all kinds of discus.

30. The chariot, to which were harnessed white horses, carrying these four kinds of energy incarnate, stood at the head of the hostile array, like the discus of Kala raised (for being hurled).

31. Thus those two high-souled heroes stood at the head of their armies. Karna stood at the head of your army and Dhananjaya at the head of the hostile troops.

32. Then, in that battle, the Kouravas and the Pandavas, looked at each other possessed with ire, and each desirous of slaying the other.

33. Thereafter when the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja, flew suddenly to the fight, the earth began to shake with the sound of terrible wails.

34. Then thick clouds of dust, blown up by the storm, and resembling heaps of tawny silk, intercepted from the view the welkin and the sun,

35. Though the sky was cloudless yet a shower of flesh, bones and blood fell on the earth, and vultures, hawks, cranes, Kankas, and crows, by thousands,

36. Swooped on your army, over and over again, O king; the jackals yelled forth; and many dreadful and fierce rangers of the sky,

37. Repeatedly placed your army to their right, being desirous of devouring flesh, and thirsting for blood.

38. On the field of battle, illuminating the welkin, dropped many a burning meteor accompanied with thundering sounds and vibrating motions and covering with their tails large areas.

39. Then, O monarch, when the commander of the host (Drona) set out for battle, the wide circumference of the lustrous orb of day, emitted flashes of lightning and thundering sounds.

40. These and many other terrible portents appeared indicating a great loss of life of many heroes in the ensuing encounter.

41. Thereafter the fight between the Kurus and the Pandus, both desirous of killing one another, commenced; and the terrible din rising therefrom filled the whole world.

42. Then, burning with wrath, the Pandavas and the Kouravas, all first-class smiters, began to pierce one another with sharpened weapons, ardently longing for victory.

43. Then that mighty champion (Drona) of great effulgence charged, with headlong speed, the army of the sons of Pandu, shooting hundreds of sharpened shafts.

44. Beholding Drona charge, the Pandavas along with the Srinjayas received him, O monarch, with showers of shafts in distinct sets.

45. That mighty host (of the Pandavas) along with the Panchalis agitated and routed by Drona, was shattered like rows of cranes by the wind.

46. In the encounter, invoking various celestial weapons Drona, in a moment, sorely oppressed the Pandavas and the Srinjayas.

47. The Panchalas having Dhristadyumna at their head, being slaughtered by Drona, like the Danavas by Vasava, began to quake.

48. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, the heroic Yajnasena, versed in the knowledge of the celestial weapons, produced by his showers of arrows many a breach, in the columns of Drona.

49. Then that powerful son of Prishata, checking the showers of Drona's arrows with those of his own, slew many a Kuru warrior.

50. Thereupon Drona of mighty arms, again rallying his soldiers and re-arranging them, charged the son of Prishata in battle.

51. Then towards the son of Prishata he directed a close shower of arrows, like Meghavat exceedingly enraged shooting his shafts towards the Danavas.

52. Thus agitated by Drona with his arrows, the Pandavas and Srinjayas, again and again, broke their lines, like a herd of inferior beasts attacked by a lion.

53. When, O monarch, like a circle of fire-brands, the mighty Drona careered through the army of the Pandavas; and that was a wonderful sight.

54—55. Riding on his own excellent cars, that resembled a city careering through the skies; that was well-supplied with the implements of war according to the military science, the banner of which was fluttering on the air, the rattle of which was resounding all round the field, the steeds of which were well-driven, and the flagstaff of which was shining like a rod of crystal—riding on such a chariot, Drona inspired the hostile army with terror and massacred it (right and left).

Thus ends the seventh chapter, the display of Drona's prowess, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER VIII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Seeing Drona thus destroy their horses, drivers, cars and elephants, the Pandavas were greatly afflicted, and could not check his career.

2. Thereupon king Yudhishthira said to Dhristadyumna and Bhishma, 'Check the career of the Pot-born Drona by surrounding him with great heed.'

3. Thereupon the mighty car-warriors namely Arjuna, and the son of Prishata together with their followers, encompassed Drona, as he was rushing at them.

4. The Kekayas, Bhimasena, the son of Subhadra, Ghatotkacha, Yudhishthira, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, the king of the Matsyas, the son of Drupada,

5. And the five sons of Draupadi greatly delighted, and Ulristaketu along with Satyaki, the wrathful Chekitana, and Yuyutsu the mighty car-warrior,

6. And, O monarch, all the other rulers of earth who followed the Pandavas in battle, achieved many feats (of valour), in accordance with their prowess and nobility of birth.

7. Seeing the Pandavas protect their army in battle, the son of Bharadwaja, rolling his eyes in anger, cast his glances (on the army).

8. Working himself up with ire, that one (Drona), indomitable in war, seated on his chariot, blew the Pandava host off like the storm blowing thick clouds off.

9. Charging cars, steeds, men, and elephants on all sides, Drona roamed in the field like one insane, and though grown up in years, he resembled one endued with the energy of youth.

10. O monarch, his horses, of chestnut colour, of excellent breed, of wind-like speed, and of indefatigable energy, assumed a beautiful appearance being bespattered with blood.

11. Beholding that one of regulated vows rush at them like the god of Death enraged, all the warriors of the Pandavas sped on all directions.

12. As some fled, and some rallied and some looked at Drona, and some stood on the field, the noise (of the confusion) they caused was dreadful and deafening.

13. That noise that imparted delight to the heroes, and enhanced the terrors of the cowards, filled the whole interval between the earth and the skies.

14. And again did Drona, shouting forth his own name, made himself terrible in battle by piercing his enemies with hundreds of arrows.

15. O sire, then the mighty Drona careered fiercely amid the army of the sons of Pandu, like the god of Death himself; and he appeared like one young, though bearing the weight of years.

16. Severing down many heads as well as arms decorated with ornaments, and rendering the seats of many a car empty, he sent up terrific roars.

17. In consequence of his rapturous roars, and of the fierceness of his arrows, O master, the warriors began to shake in battle, like kine shivering with cold.

18. A terrible sound caused by the rattle of Drona's chariot, by the contraction and stretching of his bowstring, and by the

twang of his bow, filled the conclave dome.

19. Thousands of arrows shot from his bow fell, covering cardinal points, upon the elephants, steeds, chariots, and foot-soldiers (of the hostile array)

20. Then the Pandavas along with the Panchalas, rushed at Drona wielding a bow of great strength, and resembling a blazing fire in consequence of his weapons.

21. Then he began to despatch them with their elephants, steeds, and foot-soldiers to the regions of Death, and within a short while Drona made the earth muddy with blood.

22. A net-work of arrows, woven by Drona who had been scattering celestial weapons, and shooting shafts on all sides, was seen to overshadow the cardinal points.

23. Like flashes of lightning amid dense masses of clouds, his standard could be seen whirling amongst foot-soldiers, chariots, horses and car-warriors.

24. Afflicting with arrows the five foremost among the Kēkayas, and the king of the Panchalas, Drona, of irrepressible vigour, armed with a bow and arrows, charged the division commanded by Yudhishthira.

25. Thereupon, Bhimasena, and Dhananjaya, and the grandson of Sini, and the sons of Draupada and the son of Saibya, the ruler of the Kasis, and Sibi himself, greatly delighted and sending up loud shouts, covered Drona with a stream of shafts.

26. Then numerous arrows shot from the bow of Drona, and adorned with golden wings, piercing through the bodies of elephants and young steeds, stuck themselves on the ground, with feathers crimson with blood.

27. Then the field of battle, being covered over with fallen bands of warriors, (shattered) chariots and carcases of elephants and horses mangled with arrows, appeared like the firmament overhung with dense masses of black clouds.

28. Then Drona desirous of the prosperity of your sons, having in battle trampled down the divisions led by the grandson of Sini, Bhima, and Arjuna and having crushed the son of Subhadra, and the king of the Panchalas and the ruler of the Kasis, and many other warriors,

29. And having achieved these and other wondrous feats in battle, O foremost among the Kurus, that high-souled one, Drona, left this world for heaven, after having consumed this earth like the sun that

risers at the time of the world's annihilation, O monarch.

30—36. Having achieved these great feats of valour, that chastiser of hostile armies, that possessor of a golden car, that hero, who had killed in battle hundreds of thousands of the soldiers of the Pandavas, was himself slain by the son of Prishata. Having slain more than two Akshauhini of unreturning heroes, that Drona of (unrivalled) intelligence, at last attained to the highest state of existence. O monarch, having achieved these most difficult feats, that one of a golden car was slain by the Pandavas and the Panchalas of inauspicious and heartless of deeds. When the preceptor was slain in battle, O king, a loud roar of all creatures as also of the warriors filled the sky. The loud cry of 'O fie' uttered by creatures arose in the welkin resounding through the earth, the heavens and the interval between them, and the cardinal and the subsidiary quarters. Then all the celestials and the Pitris, and the friend of the mighty car-warrior Bharadwaja (Drona), saw him slain in battle. The son of Pandu having obtained victory gave forth roars resembling those of a lion; and the (foundation of) the earth shook with those loud Leonine roars of theirs.

Thus ends the eighth chapter, the audition of the account of Drona's death, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER IX.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. What was Drona doing when the Pandavas and the Srinjayas slew him in battle,—he who was so skilful in the use of weapons amongst all wielders of arms?

2. Did his chariot give way? Did his bow snap in two in the act of smiting? Did Drona go mad, and for that reason met with his death?

3—5. O son, how was it that the son of Prishata, the prince of the Panchalas, saw that invincible hero, who scattered thick shower of arrows decked with golden wings, who was (wonderfully) light-handed; that foremost of the regenerate who was proficient in everything, thoroughly familiar with all modes of warfare, and capable of shooting his shafts to a long distance, who was self-controlled, skilful in the use of weapons, and blessed with the possession of celestial weapons, that mighty warrior who performed many dreadful feats and who was ever heedful in fight?

6. Since that heroic Drona was slain by Parshata of illustrious soul, it is evident, I think, that Destiny is more powerful than exertion.

7. In that mighty warrior, the knowledge of all the four kinds of weapons was present. Do you say to me that that Drona, that preceptor of all wielders of arrows and weapons is slain?

8. Hearing the death that hero of golden car covered over with tiger-skins, whose effulgence was like that of gold, I cannot to-day discard my grief.

9. Surely, O Sanjaya, no man ever dies through sorrow caused by another's calamity; since I, unfortunate as I am, am still alive having heard of Drona's death.

10. I do consider Destiny to be, by far, the superior; and exertion is of no avail. Surely my heart is so hard as if it were made of adamant,

11—13. Since it does not break into hundred pieces, although I have heard of the slaughter of Drona. How could he had been struck by death, on whom the Brahmanas and the princes danced attendance being desirous of receiving lessons in the Vedas and in divination, and in the use of bows. I can not even conceive the fall of Drona which is like the drying up of the ocean, the removal of the Meru mountain and the dropping of the lustreous orb from the heavens. He was the representer of the wicked and the protector of the pious.

14—15. That afflicter of enemies, who has sacrificed his life for the pitiable Duryodhana, on whose prowess rested the hope of victory of my wicked sons, who was equal to Vrihaspati and Usanas in intelligence,—how could he have been slain? His stout chestnut-coloured steeds, decked with golden trappings,

16. Fleet as the wind, yoked to his car, beyond the reach of all weapons in battle, endued with great strength, emitting neighs (in joy), well-trained, of the Sindhu breed, excellently dragging the chariot,

17. Of great sturdiness, were exhausted in the very midst of the fight? Unmoved in battle by the sight of the elephants as those huge monsters roared out with the sound of conchs and kettledrums,

18. By the twangs of bow-strings, and showers of arrows and other weapons, foretelling victory over enemies (by their mere appearance), of inexhaustible breath, and indefatigable,

19. Those fleet horses harnessed to the car of the son of Bharadwaja, were they

over-powered? Even such steeds were yoked by that foremost of human heroes to his golden car.

20. Why could he not cross the ocean of the Pandava army, mounted on his own best of cars brilliant like gold?

21. What feats did that son of Bharadwaja achieve in battle,* who made all the heroes cry, and on whose knowledge of weapons all the bowmen in the world depend?

22—23. What feats did Drona perform in battle, Drona who was endued with great strength and was ever devoted to truth? What car-warriors felled in battle Drona of fierce deeds, that foremost of bowmen, that foremost of commanders who was like Sakra himself in heaven? Did the Pandavas fly on all directions seeing him of the golden car,

24—25. Him endued with great might who invoked in the battle many celestial weapons? Did the very virtuous king Yudhishthira, with his younger brothers, and his army having the prince of the Panchalas for its reins, encompass Drona on all sides? Surely Partha checked the career of other car-warriors with his straight-going arrows.

26. Then, of course, the son of Prishata, that perpetrator of evil deeds, assaulted Drona. Indeed I do not see any one capable of bringing about the death of Drona,

27—29. Save the fierce warrior Dhristadyumna supported by Arjuna himself. I think that when these heroes namely the Kekayas, the Chedis, the Karushas, the Matsyas, and the other rulers of earth, encompassing the preceptor hemmed him in on all sides, like ants pressing upon a serpent, and that when he was occupied in the achievement of some difficult feat, then the vilest among the Panchalas must have slain him. He who, having studied the four Vedas along with their auxiliaries, and the Histories constituting the fifth Veda,

30—31. Became the refuge of the Brahmanas as the ocean is that of the rivers, that afflicter of enemies who led the life both of a Brahmana and a Kshatriya, how could that Brahmana, venerable in years meet his death through weapons. Intolerant in spirit, he was ever humiliated, and had to undergo troubles for my sake.

32—33. Through the son of Kunti he reaped the fruits of his own actions however undeserving he might have been of them. How could that one, on whose feats of valour depends the world of bowmen, who was ever devoted to truth, and of pious deeds, who was foremost like the Sakra in heaven, who was endued with great vigours and strength,

how could that one be slain by persons hankering after prosperity?

34. How could that one of great lightness of hand, endued with might, a firm wielder of bow and the grinder of his foes, how could that one be slain by the sons of Pritha like a fish slain by the smaller fishes?

35. He, meeting whom no person desirous of victory, ever returned with life, he whom when alive the following two sound never left, namely,

36. The sound of the recital of Vedic verses, by those desirous of acquiring Vedic knowledge, and the twang of the bow-strings, caused by those wishing to acquire skill in bowmanship; he who was never depressed, who was the foremost among men, and was ever attended with prosperity and was invincible,

37—38. He who was equal to the elephant and the lion in prowess, even he has been slain! I can not even tolerate the thought of Drona's death. How, O Sanjaya, the son of Prishata, slew in battle that most invincible hero whose might was never checked and whose fame was never soiled even before the very eyes of the foremost of men? Who were those persons who fought in Drona's front, and protected him from near?

39. Who were they who brought up his rear and obtained that end which is so difficult of being attained? Who were they that covered the right and the left wings of that high-souled one?

40. Who went before him when that hero fought in the battle? Who were they that courted death that stood face to face to them regardless of their body?

41—44. Who were those heroes that attained the highest state of existence, in the battle with Drona? Did those vile Kshatriyas entrusted with the protection of Drona, out of apprehension, abandon him in (the thick of) the fight? Was he slain by the foe while there helpless? Out of fear Drona would never turn his back on the field of battle, though the danger might be very great. How could he have been slain by the enemy? O Sanjaya, although in a very critical situation, an illustrious person should do this, namely, display his prowess to the best of his might; all this was in Drona. O son, my mind is losing consciousness; refrain for a while from this discourse. O Sanjaya, regaining my consciousness, I shall again question you.

Thus ends the ninth chapter, the grief of Dhritrashtra, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER X.

DRONABHISHEKA PARVA—

*Continued.***Vaishampayana said:—**

1. Thus having questioned the son of Suta, Dhritarastra, sorely oppressed with the sorrow of his heart and despondent of the victory of his sons, dropped down on the ground.

2. Seeing him unconscious and fallen down on the ground, the attendants sprinkled him with very cold and holy-scented water, fanning him all the while.

3. Beholding that great king fallen down, the Bharata ladies surrounded him on all sides, and began to chafe him (gently) with their hands.

4. Then those beautiful ladies, with their voices choked up with the vapour of grief, gently raised the monarch from the surface of the earth, and placed him on his throne.

5. Placed on the throne, the monarch overwhelmed by the influence of the swoon, remained motionless, while he was fanned from all sides.

6. Slowly regaining consciousness, that ruler of earth began to quake, and he again questioned the son of Gavalgani, of the Suta tribe, regarding the events of the battle, as they occurred.

Dhritarastra said:—

7—9. That Ajatasatru (Yudhisthira) who like the rising sun drives away darkness by his own radiance, who (charges an enemy), like a tremendous and infuriated elephant in rut, incapable of being defeated by a rival leader of herds, charging a rival proceeding with cheerful face towards a female of the species, what great warrior of of my host faced that Ajatasatru, as he charged, in order to keep him away from Drona? That foremost of men, that hero, who has slain in battle many brave warriors,

10. That mighty-armed, intelligent and and brave hero of invincible might, who, single-handed, can consume the whole host of Duryodhana by means of his terrible glances,

11. That destroyer by his glances, that one ever inclined to gain victory, that wielder of bow, that hero of eternal renown, that self-controlled warrior held in high respect by the whole world—what warriors of my army did surround that hero?

12. Who were those warriors of my host that encountered that irrepressible

prince, that wielder of bow, that hero of un-fading glory, that foremost of men, that son of Kunti?

13—14. That hero who rushing with headlong speed charged Drona, who achieves grand feats at the expense of the enemy, that most puissant one of gigantic stature and great vigour, who equals ten thousand elephants in strength,—what warriors surrounded that Bhimasena as he charged my army?

15. As that mighty car-warrior of excessive energy, Vibhatsu, resembling a dense mass of rain-clouds, came, creating terrible sounds like the clappings of the thunder-bolt, like *Parjanya* itself

16. Showering torrents of arrows like Indra showering rain, and causing the cardinal quarters to reverberate with the sound of his palms and rattle of his chariot-wheels,

17. (When that terrible hero) whose bow was effulgent like a flash of lightning, whose chariot resembled a cloud having for its thunder the rattle of its wheels, (that hero) the whizz of whose arrows made him all the more fierce,

18—20. Whose ire is like a dreadful cloud, who is fleet like the mind or the wind, who always pierces the enemy to the very core of his heart, who, armed with shafts, is dreadful to gaze at, who profusely fills all the cardinal quarters with human blood like Death himself, who, with a terrific roar and a dreadful countenance, wielding the Gandiva, pours, in one continuous shower, on the head of my warriors led by Duryodhana, shafts whetted on stone and decked with the feathers of vultures,—when that intelligent Vijaya came,—what became the state of your mind?

21. When that son of Pritha bearing the device of the foremost of apes on his banner, came, overspreading the sky with his shower of shafts, what became the state of your mind at the sight of him?

22. Did Arjuna rush to battle, killing your warriors by the very twang of his bow Gandiva, and achieving dreadful feat (as he advanced)?

23. Did Dhananjaya deprived you of your lives with his arrows, like the hurricane scattering masses of gathering clouds, or felling forests of reed by blowing through them?

24. What man is powerful enough to encounter the wielder of the Gandiva bow in battle? Even hearing him to be on the head of the (hostile) array, all ranks of soldiers give way.

25. In that battle, in which soldiers trembled and even heroes were inspired with fear, who were they that did not forsake Drona, and who were those mean fellows that fled out of terror?

26. Who were they that, in that battle, shuffling this mortal coil, courted Death standing before them in the shape of Dhananjaya who had obtained victory even over superhuman combatants?

27. My warriors cannot withstand the impetus of that one having white horses harnessed to chariot, nor can they bear the twang of the Gandiva, that resembles the rumbling of clouds in the rainy season.

28. I consider that chariot which has Vishaksena for its driver, and Dhananjaya for its warrior, to be unconquerable even by the celestials and Asuras united together.

29. Delicate, youthful, brave, of a handsome appearance, that son of Pandu who is intelligent, skilful, accurate in his memory, of prowess incapable of being thwarted, in battle,

30. When that Nakula giving forth a loud roar and afflicting the whole army, rushed upon Drona, what warriors tried to check his career?

31. When Sahadeva, resembling an infuriated snake of mortal poison, rushed at Drona, afflicting his enemies, when that one owning white horses and incapable of being conquered in battle,

32. When that one of illustrious vows, of never-failing aim, of bashful nature and invincible prowess, when that Sahadeva charged, who were those heroes that withstood him?

33. That hero who having completely crushed the army of king Souvira, took for his consort the desirable princess of the Bhojas and graceful in limbs of the body,

34. That foremost of men Yuyudhana who is ever endued with truthfulness, resoluteness, bravery, and Brahmacharya,

35. That warrior possessed of great physical strength, who always does what is true, who is never depressed, and who is invincible, and equals Vasudeva in battle and is considered to be a second Vasudeva,

36. Who, by the teachings of Dhananjaya has become foremost in the act of using arrows, who is equal to the son of Pritha in the use of weapon, what warrior of my army kept him away from Drona?

37. That, foremost hero among the Vrishnis, that bravest among all wielders of bow, who is equal to Rama himself in the use of weapons, in glory and in prowess,

38. That one of the Satwata race in whom there are truth, firmness, intelligence, prowess, the knowledge of the Vedas, and the most excellent weapons, as the triune world is in Kesava himself,

39. That mighty champion who is endued with all virtues, and who is incapable of being opposed even by the celestials, what warriors (of my army) approaching him, surrounded him on all sides?

40. That foremost among the Panchalas, that hero of noble extraction, and a favourite of all high-born persons, always achieving excellent feats in battle, namely Uttamaujaya,

41. That one ever intent on doing good to Dhananjaya, and born for doing evil only to me, who resembles Yama, or Vaisravana, or Aditya, or Mahendra, or Varuna,

42. That prince renowned as a great car-warrior, and ever ready to sacrifice his life in the very thick of battle, what heroes of my army surrounded him?

43. That one who alone deserting the Chedis had sided with the Pandus, namely Dhristaketu, what heroes surrounded him when he advanced towards Drona?

44. That heroic Ketumat, who slew the Prince Durjaya when he took shelter in Girivraja, what hero of my army kept him (Ketumat) away from Drona?

45—46. What warriors of my army encountered Sikhandin when he rushed at Drona—Sikhandin, the foremost of men, who has realised the pleasures (in himself) of manhood and femininity, that son of Jajnasena, who is ever cheerful in battle, and who became the cause of the death of the high-souled Devavrata in battle?

47. That most excellent hero among the Vrishnis, that foremost of all wielders of bow, that hero, in whom reside all virtues even in a greater degree than in Dhananjaya himself,

48. In whom always exist truth, (the knowledge of) the best weapons, and Brahmacharya, who is equal to the son of Vasudeva in prowess, and to Dhananjaya in strength,

49. Who resembles Aditya in effulgence, Vrihaspati in intelligence—namely, the high-souled Abhimanyu who is like Death himself with a gaping mouth,

50. What heroes surrounded him when he advanced towards Drona? That youthful hero of unripe understanding, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Subhadra's son,

51—52. When he charged Drona, what became the state of your mind then?

When those foremost of princes, the son of Draupadi, in battle rushed at Drona like streams flowing towards the ocean, what heroes obstructed them? Those boys, who having abandoned all boyish sports, for twelve years,

53. And observing excellent vows danced attendance on Bhima in order to receive lessons in the use of weapons, those boys, namely Kshatranjaya, Kshatradeva, Kshatravarma, and Manada,

54. Those heroic sons of Dhristadyumna, what warriors kept them away from Drona? That one whom the Vrishnis consider superior in battle to hundred warriors,

55. That mighty warrior Chekitana, what hero of my army tried to keep him away from Drona? The five Kekaya brothers, virtuous and endued with prowess incapable of being thwarted,

56. Resembling the *Indragopakas* (in complexion), furnished with red armours and weapons and banners, those heroes who are the sons of the sister of the Pandavas' mother and who ever long for the victory of the Pandavas,

57-60. What heroes of my army surrounded them when they assaulted Drona with a view to kill him? That lord of battles, desirous of slaying whom the enraged monarchs united together for six months in Varanavata could not defeat, that best of all wielders of bows, that hero of great strength and unerring aim, that foremost of men, Vuyutsu, who in a battle in Varanasi, overthrew from his car with a broad-headed shaft, the great warrior the son of Kasiraja, desirous of siezing a maiden, what hero kept him away from Drona? That mighty warrior Dhristadyumna, that principal counsellor of the sons of Pritha,

61-62. Who is ever engaged in doing harm to Duryodhana, who has been created to slay Drona, what warriors of my side surrounded him, when consuming in battle all warriors, and shattering all the ranks of my soldiers, he advanced towards Drona? That foremost of all men conversant with the weapons, who has been reared, as it were, on the very lap of Drupad,

63. That Sikhandin, guarded by Arjuna's weapons, what warriors of my army kept him away from Drona? That one who, as if with a leathern belt, encompassed this extensive earth,

64-66. With the deafening rattle of his chariot, that foremost of warriors, the chief of all slayers of enemies, who in lieu of other sacrifices accomplished ten horse-sacrifices with ample food, drink and Dakshina, that one who ruled his subjects, as if they were his own sons, that son of

Usinara who in his sacrifice gave away kine as numerous as the sand that overspread the banks of the Ganges-stream, whose this deed no man has been or will be able to imitate;

67-69. After the accomplishment by him of this feat, the very gods had exclaimed saying 'We do not see in the three worlds with all their mobile and immobile creations, a second person save Usinara's son, who has attained to regions, after death, which are unattainable by human beings'—who amongst my warriors, opposed that Saivya, that grandson of the Usinara's son, while he assaulted Drona?

70. What warriors of my host obstructed that squadron of cars, belonging to Virata, the king of the Matsyas, the slayer of his enemies, as it careered towards Drona?

71. That one endued with great strength and prowess, born of Vrikodara in the course of a single day, that heroic Rakshasa of potent illusive powers, of whom I entertain great apprehension,

72. Who is always desirous of victory for the sons of Pritha, who is a thorn in the sides of my sons, what hero of my army kept that Ghatotkacha of gigantic body away from Drona?

73. O Sanjaya, what cannot be vanquished by them for whose interests these and other such numerous (heroes) are ever ready to sacrifice their lives in battle?

74. Those sons of Pritha, whose well-wisher and refuge is that wielders of *Saranga* bow, those sons, how could they suffer defeat in battle?

75. The son of Vasudeva is the supreme preceptor of the worlds, the Lord of all and the Eternal; that master Narayana, that one of divine soul is the refuge of men in battle.

76. His divine achievements are extolled by the wise; I shall also recite them with reverence, regaining my equanimity.

Thus ends the tenth chapter, the words of Dhritarastra, in the *Dronabhisheka* of the *Drona Parva*.

CHAPTER XI.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Hear, O Sanjaya, of the celestial feats of the son of Vasudeva, feats which Govinda achieved and which no other person has ever been able to achieve.

2. While he was being reared in the family of the cowherds, that illustrious one, even in his early years, made the might of his arms, O Sanjaya, known to the three worlds.

3. (Even then) he slew the Asura *Haya-raya* (prince of steeds) who was equal to the *Uchaisravas* in might and the wind itself in fleetness, and who infested the woods on the shores of the Yamuna.

4. In his early years, he killed with his two arms only, the Danava in the form of a bull, of terrible deeds and born as Death himself to the cows.

5. He of eyes resembling lotus petals, also slew the great Asuras, named, *Pralamva*, *Naraka*, *Jamva*, *Peeta*, as also, *Mura* of god-like nature.

6. Also Kansa of great vigour who was protected by Jarasandha himself, was slain with his followers, in battle, by Krishna with his prowess alone.

7—8. The mighty sovereign of the Surasenas, by name Sunaman, of great prowess in battle, the master of a complete *Akshauhini*, endued with activity and the second brother of Kansa the ruler of the Bhojas, with all his soldiers, was consumed in battle by that slayer of enemies, viz., Krishna with Valadeva as his second.

9. That highly passionate Brahmanical sage, by name Durvasa, was adored by him (Krishna) along with his wives. The sage (pleased with him) accorded boons to him.

10. That one of eyes resembling lotus petals, that most puissant hero, (Krishna), carried away the daughter of the king of the Gandharas, after having defeated, at a *Sayamvara* (Self-choice), all the rulers of the earth.

11. Like horses, those exasperated kings were harnessed to his bridal chariot, and lacerated with the cut of his whip.

12. That Janardana, through the instrumentality of another, slew Jarasandha of mighty arms, the lord of a complete *Akshauhini*.

13. That puissant one, slaughtered, like a beast, the king of the Chedis, that powerful leader of kingly hosts, when the latter disputed with him about the (sacrificial) *Arghya*.

14. Madhava, by his prowess, hurled into the bosom of the sea, the fortress of the Danavas known as *Soubha*, situated in heaven, protected by *Sakra* and considered to be invulnerable.

15. He obtained victory in battle over the *Angas*, the *Mangas*, the *Kalingas*, the

Magadhas, the *Kasis*, the *Kosalas*, the *Vatsyas*, the *Gargas*, the *Karushas* and the *Poundras*,

16. The *Avantyas*, the *Southerners*, the *Mountaineers*, the *Daserakas*, the *Kashmirakas*, the *Auroshikas*, the *Pishachas*, the *Samudgalas*,

17. The *Kamvojas*, the *Vatadhanas*, the *Cholas*, the *Pandyas* and, O Sanjaya, the *Trigarttas*, the *Malavas*, the *Daradas* incapable of being defeated,

18. The *Khasas* and the *Sakas*, coming from various directions, and the *Yavanas* with their followers,—that one of eyes resembling the petals of a blue lotus, conquered all these tribes in battle.

19. In days gone by, entering into the abode of the sea-monster *Makara*, he defeated in battle *Varuna*, surrounded by all kinds of sea-animals, and hidden underneath watery depths.

20. *Hrishikesha* obtained the celestial conch called *Panchajanya*, after having slain in battle *Panchajanya*, who lived in the nether regions.

21. That puissant hero, obtained his indomitable weapon of fire, the discus (*Sudarsana*), by propitiating *Hutasana* (Fire) by helping it to burn down the *Khandava* forest, in which act he was assisted by the son of *Pritha* (*Arjuna*).

22. Riding on the son of *Vinata*, and creating quite a panic in the city of the Immortals, that hero carried away the *Parijata* tree from the abode of the great *Indra*.

23. That act *Sakra* submissively brooked, for he was perfectly acquainted with the prowess of Krishna. We have never heard of a king who has not been worsted by Krishna (in battle).

24. That most marvellous act, which he achieved in my assembly hall, O Sanjaya, who else, save that one of eyes resembling lotus petal, is capable of doing?

25. Since inspired by reverence I have been able to recognise Krishna as the Lord, every thing in the Vedas is well-known to me and is before my eyes.

26. Verily, O Sanjaya, none can reach the end (of the account) of achievements of *Hrishikesha* who is endued with prowess, and intelligence.

27. Then also *Gada*, *Samva*, *Pradyumna*, *Viduratha*, *Agaboha*, *Anirudha*, *Charudeshna* along with *Sarana*,

28. *Ulmuka*, *Nisata*, the powerful *Jhivobharu*, *Prithu*, *Viprithu*, *Somika* and *Arimejaya*,

29. These and other most puissant Vrishni heroes, skilled in the art of smiting, will, standing on the field, betake to the ranks of the Pandava host,

30. Being called to do so by that foremost of Vrishni warriors, viz., Keshava of high soul, then me-seems, everything (on my side) will be in great dangers.

31. The heroic Rama, decked with garlands of wild flowers, equal in strength to two thousand elephants, resembling the peak of the Kulasa mountain and armed with the plough, will be there where Janardana is.

32. That son of Vasudeva, whom all the regenerate ones call the Father of all, O Sanjaya, will battle for the interests of the sons of Pandu!

33. When that one, O son, O Sanjaya, clothes himself in mail for the interests of the Pandavas, none will come forth as his antagonist.

34. If, per chance, the Kurus obtain victory over the Pandavas then that one of the Vrishni race, for the interests of these latter will take up his excellent weapon (the discus).

35. Then that foremost of men, that mighty-armed hero, having slain in battle the Kauravas and the (assembled) monarchs will offer the whole earth to Kunti.

36. What other car can encounter in battle, that car of which the driver is Hrishikesha and the warrior is Dhananjaya?

37. In any way, I do not see victory to the Kurus. Recount to me then, all as to how the battle raged

38. Arjuna is the soul of Kesava, and Krishna is the soul of the diadem-decked (Arjuna). In Arjuna victory ever resides, and eternal glory is in Krishna.

39. In all the regions, Vibhatsu is unconquerable. All virtues are in Kesava in an extraordinary degree.

40. Duryodhana, through foolishness cannot recognise Krishna or Kesava, he is befooled by Destiny and the noose of Death hangs over him.

41. Duryodhana knows not Krishna of the Dasartha race, and Arjuna the son of Pandu, they both are supreme Divinities, of high soul, known on earth as Nara and Narayana.

42-44. On earth they appear to men as two different persons, though in reality they are of one and the same soul. That highly-renowned invincible pair, can with the fiat of their will slay this host, if only they wish it. But for humanity's sake, they do not wish it.

O son, the slaughter of Bhishma and Drona, of high souls, appears to be like the overturning of the Yuga and the stupefaction of the senses. In this world neither by Brahmacharya, nor by the study of the Vedas,

45. Nor by the performance of rites, or by the dint of weapons, can any one be saved from Death. Those two heroes, held in high honour by the worlds, accomplish in the use of weapons, and invincible in battle.

46. Namely Bhishma and Drona,—hearing of their death, why do I, O Sanjaya, still live? That prosperity, seeing which attend Yudhishthira before, we were so jealous,

47. To-day, deprived of that prosperity, we shall have to live in consequence of the death of Bhishma and Drona. This complete annihilation of the Kurus has come consequent upon my actions.

48. For the destruction of those, O you of the Suta caste, who are ripe for it, even the straw behave like a thunder-bolt. In this world Yudhishthira is going to obtain prosperity which is infinite,

49. Yudhishthira, through whose wrath Bhishma and Drona have met their ends. Righteousness has naturally attached itself to Yudhishthira, while it is hostile to the cause of my sons.

50. Time so cruel, that has come for destroying every one, cannot be overcome! O son, things calculated in one way even by intelligent persons,

51. Result in an altogether different way, through the agency of Destiny; this is my belief. Therefore relate to me truly all that occurred, on the advent of that dreadful but inevitable calamity (the death of Drona), generating most grieving thoughts, and incapable of being crossed over by us.

Thus ends the eleventh chapter, the lamentation of Dhritrashtra, in the Drona-bhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Alas! I shall relate to you everything, as I saw with my own eyes, how Drona fell being slain by the Pandus and the Srinjayas.

2. The mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja, having been installed as the commander of the army, said these words to your son, in the very midst of the soldiers.

3. "O monarch, in as much as, to-day you have honoured me with the generalship of this army, immediately after that foremost of the Kouravas, the son of the river (Ganga),

4. O Bharata, reap the adequate fruit of that act of yours. What desire of yours shall I fulfil now? Ask whatever boon you may like?"

5. Thereupon king Duryodhana, accompanied by Kaina, Dussasana and others, thus spoke to the invincible preceptor, the foremost of all victors.

6. "If you would at all accord me a boon, then having captured that foremost of car-warriors, Yudhishthira alive, do you bring him to me."

7. Thereupon the preceptor of the Kurus hearing these words of your son, spoke the following words, thereby imparting great delight to the troops.

8. "Fortunate is the king, the son of Kunti, whose capture only you desire. O invincible one, you do not ask for any other boon, such as his slaughter.

6. Why, O foremost of men, do you not desire his slaughter? For what reason do you not allude to his death? Surely O Duryodhana, you are not wanting in policy.

10. It is wonderful that the virtuous king Yudhishthira should have none deadly mimical to him. As you desire him to live, either you intend to preserve your own race,

11. Or, O foremost of the Bharatas, having defeated the Pandavas in battle, you desire to re-establish brotherly feelings (with them), by giving them back their kingdom.

12. Praised be that king the son of Kunti. The birth of that intelligent one was auspicious. The fact of his being *Ajatasatru* (having no enemy) is verified to-day, in as much as even you are affectionate towards him."

13. O Bharata, when your son had been thus addressed by Drona, the feeling that was then present in his heart, suddenly found vent.

14. Even beings like Vrihaspati himself cannot suppress the outward manifestations of internal feelings. Therefore, O monarch, your son, transported with joy, spoke these words.

15. "On the event of the death of the son of Kunti in battle, O preceptor, victory cannot be mine. If Yudhishthira were to be slain, Partha is sure to slay all of us.

16. Even the immortals cannot slay all of them in battle; so he that will survive the rest of them is sure to extirpate us all.

17. If Yudhishthira, ever truthful to his promises, be brought here alive, he being once more defeated at dice, the Pandavas obedient to him, will again repair to the woods.

18. In this way, it is obvious, that my victory will endure for a long time. It is for this that I do never desire the death of the virtuous king Yudhishthira."

19. Being apprised of his crooked intentions, Drona of keen intellect and conversant with the science of polity, accorded the boon to him after a little reflection, modifying it thus.

Drona said:—

20. "If in battle, the heroic Arjuna does not protect king Yudhishthira, then you may already regard the foremost of the Pandavas, brought under your control.

21. Even the celestials with Indra at their head, and united with the Asuras themselves, can not cope with Partha in battle, for this reason, O son, I do not venture to advance against him.

22. No doubt, he is my disciple, and I am senior to him in the use of weapons. But he is youthful, blessed with a good fortune, and assiduous in (the execution of) his intents.

23. Moreover, he has obtained weapons from Indra and Rudra, besides he has been, O king, incensed by you. It is for these reasons, that I venture not to perform what you ask me to do.

24. Withdraw Arjuna from the battle by what means so-ever that can be done. On Partha being removed, the righteous Yudhishthira is as good as vanquished by you.

25. O foremost of men, victory depends on his capture, and not on his death; and his capture can be brought about by this artifice.

26. I, having siezed that king devoted to truth and righteousness, will, O monarch, no doubt, bring him under your control to-day,

27. Provided, he remains even for a moment before me in battle; of course, if that foremost of men, the son of Kunti Dhananjaya be removed from the field of battle.

28. But, O king, before the eyes of Phalguna, Yudhishthira cannot be captured in battle, even by the celestials and the Asuras exerting jointly with Indra at their head."

Sanjaya said :—

29. When under these circumscriptions, Drona had promised the capture of king Yudhishthira, your greatly-foolish sons regarded the latter as already seized.

30. Your son was perfectly aware of the partiality Drona cherished for the Pandavas, so to make Drona strictly redeem his promise, Duryodhana gave publicity to that counsel.

31. Thereafter, O grinder of your foes, Drona's promise regarding the seizure of amongst the eldest of the Pandavas, was proclaimed all his soldiers by Duryodhana himself.

Thus ends the twelfth chapter, the granting of a boon by Drona, in the Drona-bhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER 'XIII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When Drona had promised the capture of the king under these limitations, your soldiers, hearing of the probable capture of Yudhishthira,

2—3. Uttered many loud shouts like the roars of lions, accompanying them with the noise of their (flying) shafts and the sound of their conchs. The virtuous king Yudhishthira, O Bharata, was soon apprised, in detail, of everything regarding the purposes of the son of Bharadwaja, by his trusty emissaries. Thereupon having summoned together all his brothers and the other monarchs of his host,

4. The very righteous king addressed these words to Dhananjaya :—"O foremost of men, to-day you have heard of the design of Drona.

5. Adopt such course of action, as will prevent the execution of that design. True it is that Drona the destroyer of his foes, has pledged his troth with certain limitations;

6. But those limitations, O mighty warrior, have been all made dependent on you, by him (Drona). Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you this day fight by my side, so that Duryodhana may not secure

the fruition of his desire through the agency of Drona."

Arjuna said :—

7. As, the slaughter of my own preceptor can never be perpetrated by me, so, also, O monarch, I can never agree to abandon you.

8. Rather, O son of Pandu, I would give up my life in battle, than be antagonistic to my preceptor, at any time.

9. Having captured you in battle, the son of Dhritarastra, desires to possess the kingdom; but in this world of living beings, he will never obtain the fruition of his desire.

10. The conclave dome with the stars may drop down; the earth itself may be shattered to pieces; yet Drona will never capture you, so long as I live.

11. Even if the wielder of the thunder-bolt himself, or Vishnu accompanied by the celestials, assists him in battle, still, he shall never capture you in battle.

12. O foremost of monarchs, so long as I am alive, you need not entertain any apprehension from Drona the foremost of all wielders of weapon or any body else."

13. Moreover, O foremost of kings, I say that my resolution is decided. I never think of purjuring myself; I never think of my defeat. I never think of keeping the least part, of any vow I may take, unredeemed.

Sanjaya said :—

14. Thereupon, O monarch, in the camp of the Pandavas, conchs and drums and *Mridangas* together with the *Anakas*, were simultaneously sounded.

15. There arose also loud shouts, like the roar of lions, uttered by the high-souled Pandavas; and the deafening sound resulting from the twang of their bow-strings and the striking of their palms against their arms, reached the very skies.

16. Hearing that blare of the conchs sounded by the highly-puissant sons of Pandu, your soldiers in their camp struck up various instruments.

17. Thereafter, O Bharata, your, as well their, divisions were formed into battle-array; and slowly they advanced desirous of encountering one another in battle.

18. Then raged a dreadful and hair-stirring battle, between the Pandavas and the Kurus, as also between Drona and the Panchalas.

19. Struggling to the best of their endeavours, to slay the divisions of Drona,

the Srinjayas could not accomplish their purpose, as the divisions were protected by Drona himself.

20. So also the car-warriors of your son's host, skilful in smiting down the enemy could not vanquish the Pandava division led by the diadem-decked Arjuna himself.

21. Protected by Drona and Arjuna respectively, the two armies, appeared to stand still like two blossoming forests, in the silence of the night.

22. Then, O monarch, that one (Drona) riding on the golden car like the sun himself in radiance, crushing hosts of the Pandavas, careered at will through its various divisions.

23. Then the Pandavas and the Srinjayas considered, through fright, that single car-warrior mounted on a swift-moving car and of great activity in battle, as multiplied in to many.

24. Dreadful shafts shot by him, whizzed in all directions, terrifying, O monarch, the army belonging to the son of Pandu.

25. Drona then appeared like the mid-day sun burning with a hundred light rays that drew out the perspiration from the body.

26. O Bharata, as the Danavas were unable to look at the great Indra, so none among the army of the sons of Pandu, was able to look at his wrathful self (Drona) in battle.

27. Then that most puissant son of Bharadwaja, stupefying the whole host, speedily blew off the division of Dhrishtadyumna with his sharpened arrows.

28. Obstructing the points of the compass, and overspreading the whole welkin with his straight-going shafts, Drona commenced crushing the division of the Pandava host, even at the place where the son of Prishata was.

Thus ends the thirteenth chapter, the solemn declaration of Drona to capture Yudhishthira, in the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XIV.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then Drona creating great confusion among the ranks of the Pandava host, trampled it under foot, like a forest-conflagration burning down trees.

2. The Srinjayas began to tremble with fear, seeing that enraged hero of the golden car (Drona), consume their division like a raging conflagration.

3. In that battle, they heard the twang of the constantly stretched bow of that warrior of great activity,—twang that resembled the rumbling of the thunder.

4. Terrible shafts shot by that one of great lightness of hands, completely crushed car-warriors and cavalry and elephants horses and infantry,

5. At the expiration of the Summer, like the rain-cloud, assisted by the strong gale, showering its contents, Drona, pouring streams of iron-tipped arrows, struck terror into the hearts of his enemies.

6. Then, O king, that puissant one careered through the troops of the enemy and agitating them, aggravated their fears.

7. Like flashes of lightning traversing dense masses of clouds, his bow of golden effulgence, was repeatedly seen to flash in his whirling car that resembled a mass of cloud itself.

8. That hero, ever devoted to truth, endowed with intelligence, and ever firm in righteousness, then caused a dreadful river with swelling currents, to flow there, that appeared like the one seen at the end of a Yuga;

9. That had its origin in the flow of Drona's wrath; that was infested with numerous carnivorous animals; that was filled with waves consisting of the troops; that ate away the trees (standing on its banks) consisting of heroic warriors;

10. That had blood for its waters, cars, for its eddies, elephants and horses for its banks, armours for its rows of lotuses, and flesh for the mire filling its bed;

11. That had, fat, marrow and bones, for its beaches, and excellent head-gears for its froth; that had the raging encounter for the cloudy canopy over its surface, and the split lances for the fishes that abounded in it;

12. That was inaccessible in consequence of the corpses of large number of men, elephants and horses; that flew in strong currents constituted by the impetus of the shafts; that had the slain bodies for logs of timber floating on it; that swarmed with tortoises constituted by cars;

13. That had heads for pebbles scattered on its banks; that had scimitars for the fishes abounding in it; that had elephants and chariots for its lakes; that was adorned with many ornaments;

14. That had mighty car-warriors for its hundred little whirlpools, that was ornamented with little wavelets constituted by the dust of the earth, that was capable of being crossed over in battle by those endued with great prowess, and incapable of being crossed by the cowards,

15. That had heaps of corpses obstructing its navigation, that was haunted by Kankas, and vultures, that carried, by thousand, mighty car-warriors to the regions of Death,

16. That was infested by snakes consisting of the (broken) spears, that abounded in aquatic fowls consisting of living fighters, that had torn umbrellas for its large swans, and (fallen) diadems for its smaller birds,

17. That had wheels* (or discs) for its turtles, and macs for its sharks, and arrows for its smaller fishes, that was resorted to by fearful swarms of crows, vultures and jackals,

18. And, O foremost of kings, that bore in hundreds to the regions of the ancestral manes, beings slain by the powerful Drona in that battle,

19. That was choked up with heaps of dead bodies, that had hair for its mosses and weeds. O monarch, such a river Drona caused to flow, that enhanced the apprehension of the cowards.

20. Then all those divisions having Yudhishthira at their head, assaulted on all sides that mighty car-warrior Drona who had been uttering loud shouts.

21. Then all your heroic troops endued with steady prowess received (unflinchingly) that rushing army on all sides, the result was horripilating.

22. Sakuni conversant with hundred kinds of deceitful practices, encountered Sahadeva, piercing the latter's charioteer, chariot and flag-staff with sharpened shafts.

23. Thereupon the son of Madri, wrought up with ire, cut down with his arrows, the standard, bow, charioteer, and steeds of the son of Suvala, and then pierced the latter with sixty shafts.

24. Thereupon the son of Suvala, grasping a mace, jumped down from his best of cars; then with the stroke of his mace, he felled, O king, the driver of Sahadeva, from his chariot.

25. Then, O monarch, those two heroic mighty warriors deprived of their cars, armed with their clubs, began to roam in the field of battle like two mountains adorned with peaks.

26. Drona, having pierced the king of the Panchalas with ten swift-going (shafts), was, in return, pierced by him with many shafts, and he then again pierced the latter with a still larger number of arrows.

27. Bhimasena pierced Vivinsati with twenty keen-pointed shafts, but being so pierced, he did not tremble, and that was indeed marvellous.

28. But, O mighty sovereign, Vivinsati suddenly deprived Bhimasena of his horses, standard and bow; and then the troops highly applauded him.

29. But the latter did not tolerate that act of prowess achieved by his adversary in battle; and then with his mace he felled the excellently-trained horses of Vivinsati.

30. Then, like an infuriated elephant rushing at an infuriated rival, the puissant Vivinsati, grasping a buckler, jumped down from his car the steeds of which had been slain, and assaulted Bhimasena.

31. The heroic Salya, pierced, smilingly, his own dear nephew Nakula, as if in dalliance, with arrows, in order to excite the latter's wrath.

32. But the mighty Nakula, cutting down, in that battle, Salya's steeds, umbrella, standard, charioteer and bow, blew his conch.

33. Dhristaketu having shattered in twain various shafts shot by Kripa, pierced the latter with seventy arrows, and then with three more cut off the device on Kripa's standard.

34. Thereupon Kripa encompassed him with a mighty shower of arrows, thus holding Dhristaketu in check, the Vipra fought on with him, in battle.

35. Satyakā pierced Kritavarman in the middle of his breast with a *Naracha*, then again piercing him with seventy arrows, he drove many more inside the latter's body laughing all the while.

36. The warrior of the Bhoja race, then pierced Satyakā with seven and seventy keen-pointed arrows; but he failed to move the latter like the fleet wind failing to move the mountain.

37. Senapati sorely pierced Susarman to the very quick. The latter also struck the former on the shoulder-joint with a *Tomara* (or lance).

38. King Virata, with the highly puissant Matsyas, opposed in battle the son of Viratana. And there raged a wonderful combat.

39. Then a great feat was achieved by the son of the charioteer, when he held the

whole force (of Virata) in check with (a shower of) his shafts of close-joints.

40. King Drupada himself was engaged with Bhagadatta. O mighty monarch, the combat between them was indeed marvellous.

41. Bhagadatta, the foremost of men, pierced with close-jointed shafts, king Drupada, his charioteer, flag-staff, and chariot.

42. Thereupon, wrought up with ire, king Drupada, swiftly struck the mighty car-warrior Bhagadatta on the chest with a close-jointed shaft.

43. Those two foremost of warriors on earth, both conversant with the use of weapons, namely, Sikhandin and the son of Somadatta, fought with one another in a combat that inspired terror into the hearts of all creatures.

44. Bhurisrava endured with great prowess, O king, covered in battle with a great stream of arrows, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Jajnasena.

45. O ruler of men, Sikhandin, filled with rage, pierced the son of Somadatta with ninety shafts, and, O Bharata, caused him to tremble.

46. The two Rakshasas of fierce deeds, viz., Hirimva and Alambusha, desirous of vanquishing each other, were engaged in a terrible combat.

47. Capable of creating a hundred illusions, inflamed with arrogance, and each desirous of vanquishing the other, they fought a wonderful battle assailing one another with their power of illusions.

48. The dreadful Chekitana fought with Anuvindha; they careered through the field of battle, disappearing at times and exciting great wonder.

49. Lakshmana was engaged in a terrible combat with Kshatradeva, as, O monarch, Vishnu was, in days of yore, engaged with the Daitya Hiranyakasipu.

50. Then, O king, Pourava, uttering a loud roar, and mounting on a car, to which were yoked fleet steeds and which was properly furnished, rushed at the son of Subhadra.

51. Then desirous of battle, Pourava possessed of great might assaulted Abhimanyu. Then that grinder of foes (Abhimanyu) battled fiercely with his antagonist.

52. Then the son of Puru covered the son of Subhadra with a thick shower of arrows. Then the son of Arjuna cut down on earth the standard, umbrella and steeds of the former.

53. Then the son of Subhadra having pierced Pourava with seven swiftly-flying arrows, pierced with five shafts his charioteer and horses.

54. Thus imparting delight to his own troops and repeatedly uttering leonine roars, Arjuna's son quickly took in his hand a shaft that was sure to cause Pourava's death.

55. The son of Hridika seeing that shaft of dreadful sight fixed on the bow-string (of Subhadra's son) cut it down, along with the bow, with two arrows.

56. Thereupon throwing aside that severed bow, the son of Subhadra, that slayer of inimical heroes, grasping a sharp sword and a buckler jumped down (from his car).

57. Then whirling that buckler bearing the devices of many stars which seemed to be identified with his hands as also the sword, he careered through the field of battle displaying his prowess.

58. O king, whirling the weapons by his sides and whirling them on high, and shaking them and himself jumping up he made the distinction between the sword and shield to be imperceptible.

59. Then with a loud shout he suddenly leapt upon the shaft of Pourava's car; then ascending the car he dragged Pourava by the hair;

60. Then with a kick of his leg he killed the latter's charioteer, and with his sword cut down the standard; then he threw off Pourava, like the son of Tarkhya throwing aside a snake that he had seized having agitated the waters of the ocean.

61. Then all the rulers of earth saw Pourava with dishevelled hair resembling an ox deprived of his senses, while on the point of being felled by a lion.

62. Then beholding Pourava at the mercy of the son of Arjuna, and dragged like one helpless, and fallen on the ground, Jajadratha did not tolerate it.

63. Grasping a sword and a shield decorated with the emblem of a peacock and furnished with a row of hundred small tinklers, and uttering a loud roar, he jumped down from his chariot.

64. Thereupon the nephew of Krishna beholding the prince of the Sindhus, left Pourava alone, and like a hawk suddenly jumped down from the latter's car.

65. The nephew of Krishna, severed down with his sword or warded off with his shield, the Prasas (lances) Patishas (axes) and scimitars directed to him by his enemies.

66. Then displaying to the troops the might of his own arms, that puissant hero again uplifting his heavy sword and his shield,

67. Advanced towards the son of Vriddhakshatra, the eternal enemy of his father, like a tiger rushing at an elephant.

68. Then having encountered each other as if out of delight, they began to strike each other with their swords, like a tiger and a lion attacking each other with teeth and claws.

69. Between those two foremost of men no person could notice any distinction regarding the whirl, the strokes and the descent of their swords and shields.

70. There seemed no distinction between them as regards the descent and the whirl of their swords, and the warding off of each other's blows.

71. Then those two high-souled ones, careering inward and outward, in most excellent tracks, appeared like two mountains furnished with wings.

72. Then when the high-famed son of Subhadra was on the point of bringing down his sword on the head of Jayadratha, the latter struck him on his shield.

73. Then that mighty sword, struck into the gold plate of Abhimanyu's buckler, O Bharata, broke (in twain) as the king of the Sindhus tried to take it off with force.

74. Beholding his own sword break, Jayadratha receded six steps, and within an wink of the eye, was seen to be mounted on his own car.

75. Then all the kings in a body encompassed on all sides the nephew of Krishna, who had been then disengaged from the combat and had been sitting on his excellent chariot.

76. Then the highly puissant son of Arjuna looking at Jayadratha, whirled his sword and buckler.

77. Subhadra's son, the slayer of hostile heroes, having vanquished the king of the Sindhus, consumed the troops led by the latter like the Sun scorching the world.

78. Thereupon, at him (Abhimanyu) Salya hurled, in battle, his dreadful dart made of all iron, decked with gold and resembling a flashing flame of fire.

79. Then like the son of Vinata catching hold of a mighty falling snake, the nephew of Krishna, leaping up caught hold of the dart; and having caught it, he drew his sword out of its sheathe.

80. Thereupon all the monarchs in a chorus uttered a shout resembling the roar

of a lion, having seen the lightness and prowess of that one of immeasurable energy (Abhimanyu).

81. Thereafter the son of Subhadra, that slayer of hostile heroes, let go, charging with the might of his arms, the self-same dart of Salya of great resplendence and decked with lapises.

82. Then that dart, that resembled a snake that had recently cast off its slough, reaching Salya's chariot, slew its driver and felled him down from the car.

83. Thereupon Virata, Drupada, Dhristaketu and Yudhishthira, Satyaki, Kaikaya, Bhima, Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin,

84. The twins Nakula and Sahadeva, and the sons of Draupadi, all exclaimed "Well-done" "Well-done." Whizzing sounds produced by the discharge of various arrows and ample leonine roars

85. Arose there, imparting delight to the unreceding son of Subhadra. But your sons could not tolerate these indications of victory of their adversaries;

86. And so, suddenly they covered him from all sides, with showers of sharpened shafts, O monarch, like the clouds pouring their contents on the mountain.

87. Then Atrayani, the slayer of foes, desirous of doing good to your sons and remembering the overthrow of his charioteer, rushed in rage at the son of Subhadra.

Thus ends the fourteenth chapter, the prowess of Abhimanyu, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XV.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued:

Dhritarastra said :—

8. O Sanjaya, you have described to me various wonderful accounts of single combats; hearing them I envy those who are blessed with eyes.

2. In this world, all men will speak of this battle between the Kurus and the Pandavas, resembling that between the celestials and the Asuras, as very wonderful.

3. I am never satisfied with the audition of this excellent fight; therefore do you recount to me the (details of the) combat between Atrayana and the son Subhadra.

Sanjaya said :—

4. Seeing his charioteer overthrown, Salya uplifting a mace wholly made of iron, and in rage uttering a loud shout, jumped down from his excellent car.

5. Thereupon Bhima also grasping a mighty mace speedily encountered him (Salya) who then resembled the all-destroying fire in effulgence, and also the God of death wielding his bludgeon.

6. The son of Subhadra also grasping a huge mace that looked like the thunderbolt itself, called out to Salya saying 'Come, Come'; but Bhima, with great efforts, prevented him (from joining in the fray).

7. Then having dissuaded the son of Subhadra, the puissant Bhimasena, meeting Salya in battle, stood immovable like a mountain.

8. Also the mighty-powerful king of the Madras, beholding Bhima, rushed at him with impetuosity, like a tiger attacking an elephant.

9. Then there arose the blare of trumpets and conchs by thousands, as also lionine roars and deafening sounds of drums.

10. Loud shouts of 'Well-done' 'Well-done' were uttered by hundreds of Kuru and Pandava warriors who had been looking on and rushing against one another.

11. O Bharata, none among the host of kings, except the ruler of the Madras, could withstand in battle, the impetuosity of the attack of Bhimasena.

12. Also, in this earth, none except Vrikodara, could bear the vehemence of the mace wielded by the king of the Madras of illustrious soul.

13. Then that huge mace, covered over with a net-work composed of heaped strings and gold wires, imparted great delight into the hearts of the troops, and being wielded by Bhima it seemed to blaze forth.

14. Then both Salya and Vrikodara, whirling their maces and moving in various orders, began to course in various circles.

15. Whether as regards their circular movements and whirling motions or their wielding of the maces, the fight between those two foremost of men was equal in every respect.

16. The prodigious mace of Salya being struck against that of Bhimasena, emitted dreadful flashes of fire and then quickly fell into fragments.

17. Similarly the mace of Bhimasena being struck against that of his adversary,

resembled a tree lighted by fire-flies during the rainy season at night-fall.

18. The mace hurled by the king of the Madras in battle, O Bharata, illuminating the welkin, frequently emitted flashes of fires.

19. Similarly the mace hurled by Bhimasena at his foe, consumed the latter's troops like a dreadful meteor shooting down.

20. Then those two excellent of maces, clashing against each other, appeared like two fiercely breathing she-snakes, and emitted flashes of fire.

21. Then like two mighty tigers attacking one another with their claws or like two infuriated elephants doing the same with their tusks, those two heroes, coursed (in the field), having grasped their two excellent maces.

22. Then both of them being simultaneously struck with those excellent of maces, were soon besmeared with blood and they resembled two Kinsuka trees decked with blossoms.

23. Then in all the points of the compass was heard, like the rumbling of Sakra's thunder, the sound generated by the clash of the maces wielded by those two foremost of men.

24. Struck with the mace of the ruler of the Madras both on the left and on the right side, Bhima did not tremble, even like a mountain cleft open (by the thunder-bolt).

25. Also the puissant king of the Madras being struck by impetus of the mace of Bhima, patiently stood immovable like a mountain riven by the thunder-bolt itself.

26. Upraising their maces, they assaulted one another with great impetus, they then again began to course in shorter circles.

27. Leaping over space measuring eight steps and falling upon one another like two rival elephants, they began to strike with vehemence, one another, with their iron bludgeons.

28. In consequence of their great impetus, and being struck sorely with each other's mace, those two heroes simultaneously fell down on earth like two poles raised in honour of Indra.

29. Thereupon the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman speedily came to Salya's rescue who was deprived of his senses and was breathing quickly.

30. Seeing Salya crushed with the stroke of the mace, and writhing like a snake and overwhelmed with a swoon, O monarch,

31. The mighty car-warrior Kritavarman, speedily taking up the ruler of the Madras

on his car carried him away from the field of battle.

32. Though unconscious like one drunk the mighty-armed and heroic Bhima rose up in a twinkling of the eye and was seen standing with his mace in his grasp.

33. Thereupon your sons seeing the king of the Madras turn back from the field of battle, O Sire, began to tremble supported though they were by elephant, infantry, cavalry and cars.

34. The warriors of your army being crushed by the Pandavas desirous of victory and struck with fear, fled in all directions like clouds driven by the storm.

35. The mighty warriors, O king, of the Pandava host having vanquished, in battle, the army of Dhritarashtra, appeared effulgent like blazing fires.

36. Transported with joy, they blew their conchs and gave forth roars resembling those of the lions, and struck up their drums along with *mrīṅgas* and cymbals.

Thus ends the fifteenth chapter, the defeat of Salya in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XVI.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing that army of yours thoroughly routed in battle, O monarch, Vrishasena endued with prowess, single-handed, began to protect it by means of the illusion of this weapons.

2. In that battle numerous shafts discharged by Vrishasena flew in all the ten directions of the compass, piercing men, horses, cars and elephants.

3. Like the rays of the sun, O king, mighty arrows of blazing effulgence shot by him, began to fly (on all sides).

4. O monarch, pierced by him car-warriors and cavalry began to fall down suddenly on the ground, like trees broken by the hurricane.

5. That mighty car-warrior felled in battle, O monarch, large divisions of steeds, car-warriors, and elephants, by hundreds and thousands.

6. Seeing him career alone through the field of battle, like one fearless, all the monarchs uniting together encompassed him on all sides.

7. The son of Nakula by name Satanika charged Vrishasena and pierced the latter with ten *Narachas* that could penetrate into the very vitals.

8. The son of Karna, in return, sundered his bow and cut down his standard. The sons of Droupadi desiring to rescue their brother, rushed towards him.

9. Soon with their arrowy showers they made the son of Karna disappear from the view. Thereupon car-warriors headed by the son of Drona charged them, removing the shower of their arrows.

10. O monarch, these warriors (headed by Drona's son) speedily covered over the mighty car-warriors namely the sons of Droupadi, with arrows of various description like clouds pouring their contents on a mountain.

11. Prompted by their affection for their sons, the Pandavas quickly encountered them (assailants), being followed by the Panchalas, Kaikayas, Matsyas and Srinjayas, with their arms uplifted.

12. Then commenced a fierce and sanguinary and hair-stirring engagement between your army and the army of the sons of Pandu like that between the celestials and the Danavas.

13. Thus the heroes among the Kurus and the Pandava hosts, wrought up with wrath, fought with one another looking furiously at one another and nourishing (deadly) hatred for one another.

14. The bodies of those warriors of immeasurable prowess in consequence of their being inspired with wrath, appeared like those of the feathered chief (Garuda) and of the mighty serpents fighting in the skies.

15. The scene of action with Bhima, Karna, Kripa, Drona and Drona's son, and Parshata and Satyaki, appeared effulgent like the all-destructive sun that rises (at the time of the universal annihilation).

16. Then there ensued a dreadful battle, like that between the celestials and the Danavas, in which mighty warriors engaged with mighty antagonists smote down one another.

17. Thereafter the host of Yudhishthira, setting up a noise loud as that of the (agitated) ocean, full to slaughter your host, of which the mighty car-warriors have fled.

18. Then seeing the (Kourava) host thoroughly shattered and excessively mutilated by the enemy, Drona exclaimed: 'You need not fly, O heroes.'

19. Thereafter that hero owning chestnut steeds, inflamed with rage, like an

elephant bearing four tusks, penetrated into the Pandava ranks and rushed at Yudhishthira.

20. Thereupon Yudhishthira pierced him with shafts, keen-pointed and furnished with feathers of the Kanka bird, Drona also cutting his bow in two charged him with great impetus.

21. Thereat the protectors of Yudhishthira's car-wheels namely Kumara, the glory to the Panchala races, resisted the rushing Drona, like the beach opposing the swelling sea.

22. When Drona the foremost of the regenerate ones was seen to be held in check by Kumara, there were heard sounds of war-cries and exclamations of 'Excellent, excellent &c.'

23. Then in that battle, fierce Kumara, wrought up with ire, pierced, with a shaft, Drona on the chest; and then repeatedly uttered roars like those of the lion.

24. Then that highly puissant and indefatigable Kumara of great lightness of hands, having held Drona at bay in that battle, pierced him with thousands of shafts.

25. Thereafter the foremost of the twice-born ones (Drona) slew Kumara that protector of Yudhishthira's car-wheels who was brave, of illustrious vows, and well-versed in the use of weapons and *mantras*.

26. Then that foremost of the regenerate ones, the son of the Bharadwaja, became the protector of your army, having penetrated into the centre of the Pandava host and coursing on all directions.

27. Piercing Sikhandin with twelve arrows, Uttamanjas with twenty, Nakula with five, and Sahadeva with seven,

28. Yudhishthira with twelve and the sons of Droupadi each with three, Satyaki with five and the ruler of the Matsyas with ten arrows,

29. And rushing at the foremost warriors of the Pandavas in due order, he (Drona) agitated the warlike host in that battle. Then desirous of capturing the son of Kunti namely Yudhishthira, he (Drona) charged him.

30. Thereupon, O monarch, Yugandhara opposed the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja, who was inflamed with rage, like the ocean swelling with the tempest.

31. But Drona, having pierced Yudhishthira with close-jointed shafts, overthrew Yugandhara from his niche in the car with a broad-headed arrow.

32. Thereupon Virata and Drupada, Kekaya and Satyaki and Sibhi, and Vyag-

hradatta, the prince of the Panchalas and Sinhasena endued with prowess—

33. These and many other warriors, desirous of rescuing Yudhishthira, impeded Drona's path by scattering innumerable arrows.

34. Vyaghradatta, the prince of the Panchalas, pierced Drona with fifty whetted arrows; thereupon, O monarch, the Pandava host uttered a loud shout.

35. Sinhasena also having quickly pierced the mighty car-warrior Drona, suddenly, out of delight, broke out into a laugh, inspiring terror into the hearts of the mighty car-warriors.

36. Thereupon expanding his eyes, and twanging his bow-string, and making a loud sound by striking his arms with his palms, Drona rushed upon him (Sinhasena).

37. Then Drona of great prowess putting forth his energy, severed the head of Sinhasena decked with ear-rings as also that of Vyaghradatta, with a pair of broad-headed shafts.

38. Then with the shower of his arrows having crushed the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host, he stood near the chariot of Yudhishthira like the all-destroying Death himself.

39. When Drona of regulated vows reached the vicinity of Yudhishthira, O monarch, loud cries of 'The king is slain' were uttered by the warriors of Yudhishthira's army.

40. Then the soldiers, beholding the prowess of Drona said, 'To-day the royal son of Dhritarastra will attain the fruition of his desire.'

41. This very moment Drona, having captured in battle the son of Pandu, will, being transported with joy, surely return to us and to the son of Dhritarastra.'

42. When your soldiers had been thus conversing, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Kunti (Arjuna) rushed there with impetuosity, rounding the welkin with the rattle of his car, and

43. Creating, by the carnage he caused, a river, of which the water consisted of blood, and the eddies of cars; which was stagnant with bones and corpses of brave warriors, and which conveyed creatures to the regions of the departed.

44. Having crossed that river having the myriad shafts for its froth and abounding in fishes consisting of lances, the son of Pandu came there crushing the Kurus with his speed.

45. Thereafter the diadem-decked Arjuna suddenly charged Drona's division,

covering it with a net-work of mighty arrows and stupefying therewith the warriors that followed Drona.

46. Nobody was able to perceive any interval between the swift placing of the arrows on the bow-string and their discharge by the well-renowned son of Kunti.

47. Neither the cardinal quarters, nor the welkin, nor the conclave dome, nor the earth, could be seen any longer, O monarch; everything then appeared to be a continuous mass of arrows.

48. Then when the wielder of the Gandiva had caused a 'palpable darkness' in the field of the battle with his shafts, nothing, O monarch, could be distinguished.

49. At the setting of the sun at that moment, and at the enveloping of the earth with dusk, neither foe nor friend could be distinguished any longer.

50. Thereupon Drona and Duryodhana and others began to withdraw their forces. Considering his enemies to be inspired with terror and unwilling to carry on the fight,

51—52. Vibhatsu also slowly withdrew his own divisions; then the Pandus and the Srinjayas and the Panchalas highly delighted began to praise the son of Pritha (Arjuna), with agreeable words, like the *Rishis* praising the Sun. Thus having vanquished his foes Dhananjaya, filled with rapture, and accompanied by Keshava, retired to his own camp, bringing up the rear of his whole army.

53. Seated in the terrace of his excellent chariot adorned with emeralds and rubies and diamonds of the first water, and with the costliest specimens of gold, silver, corals, and crystal, the son of Pandu shone like the moon in the heavens adorned with the stars.

Thus ends the sixteenth chapter, the victory of Arjuna, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XVII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)

Sanjaya said :—

1. O lord of men, the troops having retired to their camps, duly took up their quarters, according to the divisions and ranks to which they belonged.

2. Having withdrawn his soldiers, Drona, with a dejected heart, seeing Duryodhana, spoke these words in shame.

3. 'I have told you before, that when Dhananjaya stays by the side of Yudhis-

thira, even the celestials will not be able to capture the latter in battle.

4. You all assaulted Partha in battle, but he defeated all of you; do not doubt my words; Krishna and the son of Pandu are incapable of being vanquished in battle.

5. If however by any means Arjuna owning white steeds can be taken away from the side of Yudhisthira, then, O king, even to-day may Yudhisthira be brought under your sway.

6. Let some one challenging him (Arjuna) in battle take him to another part of the field. The son of Kunti will not return without having vanquished him.

7. O monarch, during that interval when Yudhisthira will be deprived of the help of Arjuna, I, penetrating through the Pandava hosts will capture the very virtuous king, even before the very eyes of Dhristadyumna.

8. Thus, O monarch, I will to-day with certitude bring under your control Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, with all his followers.

9. If, in battle, that son of Pandu stays only for one moment (before me) then I will bring him (a captive) from the field; surely that achievement will be of more advantage than victory (over the hostile army).

Sanjaya said :—

10. Thereat, having listened to these words of Drona, the ruler of the Trigarttas united with his brothers, spoke these words, O monarch.

11. 'O monarch, we have been very often humiliated by the wielder of the Gandiva bow; O, foremost of the Bharatas, though we have done him no harm yet he bears malice against us.

12. We, remembering those various occasions of humiliation, are ever consumed with the fire of wrath, and, at night can never enjoy sleep.

13. By good fortune it is that Arjuna bearing arms, will become the object of our sight; so we will achieve that feat which our hearts long to accomplish.

14. This act will be agreeable to you and shall redound to our renown. Drawing him out of the field of battle we shall slay him.

15. To-day the earth will be relieved of the burden of Arjuna or that of the Trigarttas. Truly we resolve this before you, and this our resolution will never be falsified? *

16. Satyaratha, Satyavarma, Satyavrata, Satyashu, and Satyakarma, O Bharata, having spoken in the same manner,

17. Those five brothers, with their ten thousand cars, retired, O monarch, having taken that oath on the field of battle.

18. The Malavas, and the Tundikeras, with thirty thousand cars, and that foremost of men Susarman of the Trigartta race, the ruler of Prasthala,

19. Together with the Mavelakas the Lalithyas, and the Madrakas, and with ten thousand cars and accompanied by his brothers,

20. And with another ten thousand excellent cars come from various kingdoms, came forward to take the oath.

21. Then bringing fire, and every one having separately kindled one for himself, they took up mats of *Kusa* grass and excellent mail-coats.

22. Then having donned their armours and having smeared themselves with clarified butter and wearing those mattresses of *Kusa* grass, and with their bowstrings as their belts, those heroes, who had given away hundreds and thousands as Dhakshina,

23. Who had accomplished many sacrifices, who had been blessed with sons, who deserved regions of bliss hereinafter, who had done what ought to be done, who were ready to lay down their bodies, who had devoted their souls to the acquirement of fame and victory,

24. Who were intent speedily on going to the regions,—by being killed in a fair fight,—that are attained by means of sacrifices attended with profuse Dakshinas, and by means also of many such other rites, the foremost of which are Brahmacharyya and the study of the Vedas,—

25. Those heroes having gratified the Brahmanas by giving them golden coin separately and also kine and garhments, and having addressed one another in loving words,

26. And having kindled the fire, took that oath in the field of battle; then in the presence of that fire they took that oath with a great firmness of resolution.

27. Having formed that firm resolution for the death of Dhananjaya they said these words aloud in the hearing of all present.

28. "Those regions that are for the liars, those that are for the Brahminicides, those that are for the drunkards, those that are for a person who has illicit intercourse with the wife of his preceptor,

29. Those that are for him who robs a Brahmana of his property, or for him who enjoys the king's allowance (without fulfilling the conditions thereof), or for him who

forsakes one seeking shelter in him, or for him who slays one asking for favours,

30. Those regions that are for the incendiary, or for the slayer of the kine, or for him that does injury to others, or for him that nourishes ill-will against the Brahmanas;

31. Those regions that are for him who, out of foolishness, does not hold sexual intercourse with his wife during her season, those also that are for men who indulge in sexual intercourse on the day they have to perform a *shradha*, those that are for people who injure their own soul;

32. Those that are for men who appropriate things deposited with them out of trust, or for those who destroy knowledge, or for those who fight with the eunuchs, or for those that follow the mean;

33. Those regions that are for the atheists, or those that are for people who abandon the Fires and their own mother, or those that are for the sinful,—those regions shall be ours,

34. If we return from the field of battle without having slain Dhananjaya, or if afflicted by him we, out of terror, turn away our faces from the field.

35. If, on the other hand, we can accomplish in battle that feat difficult of achieving, then, for certain, to-day we shall attain to the most desirable regions.'

36. O monarch, having thus spoken, they then proceeded to the fight summoning Arjuna to the southern part of the field.

37. That foremost of men, that conqueror of hostile fortress, namely the son of Pritha, being summoned by them, said these words without delay to the very virtuous king Yudhisthira.

38. 'Challenged, I will never turn back. This is my firm resolution. These *Samsaptakas* (those who are sworn to die or to conquer) O king, are calling me to meet them in battle.

39. This Susarman with his brothers is summoning me to battle. It behoves you to permit me to slay him and his followers.

40. O foremost of men, I can not brook this challenge; I do tell you truly, know these hostile heroes to be already slain in battle.

Yudhisthira said:—

41. O child, you are perfectly aware of what Drona is intent on doing. Act in such a manner so that his intention may be frustrated.

42. Drona is endued with prowess, and he is heroic, accomplished in the use of

weapons, and indifragible (in battle). O mighty car-warrior, even he has resolved to bring about my capture.

Arjuna said :—

43. This Satyajit, O monarch, will protect you in battle to-day; and so long as the prince of the Panchalas lives, the preceptor will not attain the fruition of his desires.

44. If, on the other hand, O master, this foremost of men, Satyajit, be slain in battle, then you shall not stay in the field even if surrounded by all (our warriors).

Sanjaya said :—

45. Then king Yudhisthira gave Phalgun the permission he sought; and embraced him and cast affectionate glances on him and pronounced numerous benedictions on him.

46. Having made these arrangements, the puissant son of Pritha went to meet the Trigarttas, like a hungry lion falling upon a herd of deer, for assuaging its hunger.

47. Thereafter the army of Duryodhana highly delighted at the absence of Arjuna from Yudhisthira's side, became infuriated at the thought of the capture of the virtuous monarch.

48. Thereupon both armies clashed against each other with great vehemence, like the conflux of the rivers Ganga and Saraju in the rainy season, when they are both swollen with water.

Thus ends the seventeenth chapter, the departure of Dhananjaya, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XVIII.

(SAMSAPTA-KA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O monarch, the Samsaptakas, filled with joy, stood on the level plain, having, with their chariots, formed an array figuring the moon.

2. O Sire, seeing the diadem-decked Arjuna rush at them, those foremost of men, highly delighted, gave out deafening roars.

3. Those roars filled the subsidiary and the cardinal quarters and also the conclave dome. There were produced no reverberations owing to the field being covered over with men.

4. Then Dhananjaya, ascertaining them to be excessively delighted, said these words to Krishna, smiling the while.

5. 'Behold, you—who have Devaki for your mother, these Trigartta brothers, who are about to fall in battle to-day, are transported with joy at the time when they really ought to weep.'

6. Or surely, this is the time for joy for the Trigarttas, as they shall, ere long, attain to those excellent regions which can not be obtained by the cowards.'

7. Having thus spoken to the mighty-armed Hrishikesha, Arjuna encountered in battle the ranks of the Trigartta soldiers disposed of in battle-array.

8. Thereafter taking up his conch known as *Dhvadatta* of the effulgence of gold, he blew it with great force, filling the points of the compass with the blare.

9. Terrified at that blare, the car-host of the Samsaptakas stood motionless in the field of battle as if turned into adamant.

10. All their steeds stood with their eyes expanded and their ears, necks and lips paralysed, and their legs motionless; and they discharged urine and vomited blood.

11. However, regaining consciousness and rallying their forces, the Samsaptakas discharged simultaneously, at the son of Pandu, shafts furnished with the feathers of the *Kanka* bird.

12. Thereupon Arjuna, capable of manifesting with lightness his prowess in battle, severed those thousand arrows before they could reach him, with fifteen swift-coursing shafts of his.

13. Thereat they pierced Arjuna with ten whetted shafts separately; and the son of Pritha also pierced them separately with three shafts each.

14. Then, O monarch, each of them separately pierced the son of Pritha with five shafts; and the puissant Partha in return pierced them each with a couple of arrows.

15. Wrought up with ire, they once again quickly filled Arjuna and Keshava with arrows, like the rains filling up a lake.

16. Then those thousands of arrows fell upon Arjuna like hosts of bees falling, in a forest, on trees decked with blossoms.

17. Thereafter Savahu deeply stuck on the diadem of Savyasakhi (Arjuna) thirty shafts made of the hardest adamant.

18. Having those straight-going shafts furnished with wings of gold stuck on his diadem, Arjuna, as if adorned with ornaments of gold, shone like the rising Sun.

19. Then in that battle the son of Pandu, with a broad-headed arrow cut off the finger-guard of Suvahu, and also covered him over with arrowy showers.

20. Thereafter Susarman, Suratha, Sudhama, and Suvahu, pierced the diadem-decked Arjuna with ten arrows each.

21. Thereat, that one, bearing the foremost of the monkeys as a device on his banner, pierced them all with several arrows in return; and he cut down their golden flag-staffs with broad-headed shafts.

22. Having severed the bow of Sudhama, Arjuna slew his horses with his shafts. Then Arjuna severed from the trunk, the head of the former furnished with a head-gear.

23. At the fall of that brave warrior, his followers, were inspired with terror; and seized with panic they ran to where the army of Duryodhana was.

24. Then the son of Vasava, (Arjuna) wrought up with rage, began, to destroy that mighty host with his continuous network of arrows, like the rays of the sun, destroying the darkness (of night).

25. When that host was shattered and scattered in all directions, and when Savya-sachin was inflamed with wrath, panic seized the Trigartas.

26. Then they, slaughtered with the close-jointed shafts of Partha, were overwhelmed with swoons, in that field, like a terrified herd of deer.

27. Thereupon, excited with rage, the sovereign of the Trigartas addressing those mighty car-warriors said, 'Fly not, you heroes, it behoves you not to be seized with panic.

28. Having taken dreadful oaths before the eyes of the entire troops, what shall you say to the leaders of Duryodhana's army if now you go back to them?

29. Will we not be the objects of derision in this world, for this (cowardly) act of ours in battle? United together, do you again repair to your own divisions?

30. Thus being spoken to, O monarch, they uttered continuous roars, and those heroes blew their conchs imparting delight to one another.

31. Thereafter that Samsaptaka host once more rallied themselves; and with the Narayana cow-horns, they were determined even to encounter death himself.

Thus ends the eighteenth chapter, the slaughter of Sudhama, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XIX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA).—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Beholding the host of the Samsaptakas once more return to battle, Arjuna thus addressed the high-souled son of Vasudeva.

2. 'O Hrishikesha urge my steeds against this host of the Samsaptakas. I think they will not give up the battle so long life will be extant in them.

3. Behold, to-day, the terrible prowess of my two arms as also that of my bow. This day I will slay them, like Rudra slaying creatures (at the time of the universal annihilation).'

4. Thereupon Krishna smiling, and greeting the invincible Arjuna with auspicious words, pushed in the chariot where-so-ever the latter desired it to go.

5. That chariot, borne in that battle by white steeds, appeared excessively effulgent, like a celestial car borne through the firmament.

6. O monarch, like the chariot of Sakra in the battle between the gods and the Asuras in the days of yore, that car moved in circular, backward and forward motions.

7. Then the Narayana soldiers inflamed with rage and holding various weapons in their hands, encompassing Dhananjaya, covered him with showers of arrows.

8. O foremost of the Bharatas, in a moment they, in that battle, made the son of Kunti namely Dhananjaya, together with Krishna, disappear from the sight.

9. Wrought up with wrath, Bhishma, doubling his energy in that battle, rubbed his bow Gandiva and quickly grasped it.

10. Causing a frown indicative of wrath to gather on his brow, the son of Pandu charged his mighty conch called Devadatta with his breath.

11. Thereafter Arjuna discharged the weapon called *Tashtra* that is capable of slaying large divisions of the enemy. Thereupon thousands of separate forms (of Arjuna and Vasudeva) started into existence there.

12. Confounded by the various images of Arjuna's self, they fell to slay one another each considering the other to be Arjuna himself.

13. 'This is Arjuna, this is Govinda, these two are the son of Pandu and the descendant of Yadu'—uttering these exclamations,

and stupefied, they slew each other in that fight.

14. Confounded by virtue of that weapon, they courted destruction through one another's agency. In that battle those warriors shone like flowering *Kinsuka* trees.

15. Then that weapon, consuming the thousands of shafts discharged by the enemy, conveyed those heroes to the regions of Death.

16. Thereafter Vibhatsu, with a smile, crushed with his arrows the war-like *Lalithyas*, the *Malavas*, the *Mavelakas* and the *Trigaritas*.

17. Those *Kshatriyas*, doomed by fate to die, being smitten by the heroic son of *Pritha*, discharged at him a net-work of diverse arrows.

18. Thereupon, neither *Arjuna*, nor his car, nor *Keshava* was to be seen on the field, being covered over by that terrible arrowy showers.

19. Then finding their arrows strike the aim, they exclaimed to one another saying 'Krishna and *Arjuna* are both slain'; and out of delight they waived their garments in the air.

20. Then those heroes sounded, by thousands, drums and *Mridangas* and conchs, and, O sire, they also gave forth war-cries resembling the roars of lions.

21. Then *Krishna* greatly perspiring, addressed *Arjuna* covered with sweat, saying 'Where are you, O son of *Pritha*, I do not see you, do you live, O slayer of your foes.'

22. Hearing those words of his (*Krishna's*), *Dhananjaya* quickly dispelled that arrowy shower poured by the enemy, by means of the *Vavahya* weapon.

23. Then the almighty *Vayu* blew away hosts of the *Sansaptakas* consisting of steeds, elephants, chariots and weapons like heaps of dry-leaves.

24. Borne away by the god *Vayu*, they appeared highly beautiful like flights of birds, O sire, flying up from trees at the hour of dawn.

25. Thus causing great anxiety in them, *Dhananjaya* with great lightness of hands slew, with keen pointed shafts, hundreds and thousands of the enemy.

26. He struck their heads and arms bearing weapons, with broad-headed shafts; and with his arrows he cut down on the ground their thighs resembling the trunks of elephants.

27. Some had their backs lacerated, some were deprived of their legs, some were hit on the arms, backs and eyes; thus

Dhananjaya made his enemies deprived of their various limbs.

28. Shattering into pieces with his arrows, chariots resembling a real castle and equipped according to rule, he deprived them of their steeds, warriors and elephants.

29. At places several crowds of chariots, having their flag-staffs severed, looked like forests of palmyra trees deprived of their heads.

30. Elephants furnished with excellent weapons, banners, hooks, and standards fell down like woody mountains rent asunder by the thunder-bolt of *Indra*.

31. Smitten with the arrows of *Partha*, steeds, graced with tails like those of the yak, protected with coats of mail and with their entrails, eyes, and vitals dragged out, rolled on the ground along with their riders.

32. Dropping from their grasps the swords that had served the purposes of their nails, having their armours torn and the joints of their limbs smashed, foot soldiers, with their vital parts cut open, helplessly laid themselves down (on the field) being slain (by *Partha*).

33. The field of battle assumed an awful aspect in consequence of those warriors slain or in course of being slaughtered fallen and falling, wheeling round or staying motionless.

34. The cloud of dust that had arisen was now cleared away by means of the shower of blood. The ground became slippery and was strewn with numerous headless trunks.

35. Then the chariot of *Vibhatsu* shone fierce and dreadful in that battle, like the chariot of *Rudra* himself when at the end of a *yuga* he slays all creatures.

36. Thus being slaughtered by the son of *Pritha*, those warriors, with their steeds, cars, and elephants in distress and their ranks thinned, rushed at him and thus were made the guests of *Sakra* (i.e. were transported to the regions of *Indra*).

37. O foremost of the *Bharatas*, that field of battle then strewn with many a slain car-warrior of renown, shone like the region of Death swarming with the spirits of the departed.

38. During this period when *Savyasachin* was furiously engaged (with the *Sansaptakas*) *Drona*, at the head of his divisions formed in battle-array, charged *Yudhishthira*.

39. Many a warrior, arrayed in order of battle and accomplished in striking

quickly formed Drona's support, out of a desire for capturing Yudhishthira. Thereupon a dreadful fight ensued.

Thus ends the nineteenth chapter, the fight of Arjuna, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja, having passed the night, thus addressed Sujodhana saying :— 'I am yours.'

2. Having made arrangements for Partha's encounter with the host of the Samsaptaka, (you have done well) 'When the son of Pritha had gone out to slay the Samsaptaka,

3. Drona, having formed his soldiers in battle-array, charged the mighty host of the Pandavas, O foremost of the Bharatas, with the desire of capturing the very virtuous king Yudhishthira.

4. Beholding the son of Bharadwaja, form his forces in an array figuring the appearance of *Suparna*, Yudhishthira disposed his forces in counter-array in the shape of a semi-circle.

5. The mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja himself formed the mouth of the *Suparna*, and king Duryodhana along with his uterine brothers and his followers formed its head.

6. Kritavarman and the effulgent Goutama formed its two eyes; Bhutasarman, Kshemasarman, the puissant Koraskatsha,

7. The Kulingas, the Singhalas, the Easterners, the Sudras, the Ahiras, the Kambojas, as also the Hansapidas,

8. The Surisenas, the Madras, the Kekayas, the Daradas, with hundreds and thousands of elephants, steeds, chariots, and foot-soldiers, formed its neck.

9. Bhurisrava, and Salva, Somadatta as also Valhika, these heroes surrounded by a Akshouhini of soldiers stationed themselves in the right flank.

10. Vinda and Juvinda of the kingdom of Avanti, and Sudakshina, the ruler of the Kambojas, took up their positions in the left flank placing themselves in front of the division of Drona's son.

11. The Kalingas, the Amvathas, the Magadhas, the Pundras, the Madakas,

the Gandharas, the Sakunas, the Easterners, the Highlanders and the Vasatis were stationed in the back of that *Suparna*.

12. In the tail was stationed Karna the son of Vikartana, supported by his sons, relatives and friends and surrounded by a large force recruited from various regions.

13. Jayadratha, Bhumaratha, Sampati, the Yajas, the Vojas, Bhuminjaya, Vrisha, Kratha, and the ruler of the Nishadhas of great prowess,

14. O monarch, these, surrounded by mighty hosts, accomplished in fighting, and keeping the region of Brahma before their view, stationed their selves in the bottom of that array.

15. That array formed by Drona and composed of foot-soldiers, horses, chariots and elephants, appeared to dance like the ocean lashed into fury by the tempest.

16. From the wings and flanks of that array, warriors, desirous of battle, began to rush out like clouds surcharged with thunder and lightning, rushing (in the welkin) from all direction of the compass during the season of summer.

17. In the heart of that array, the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, mounted on an elephant equipped according to rule, O monarch, shone like the sun at the time of its rising.

18. O monarch, adorned with garlands of flowers, and having a white umbrella held over his head, he shone like the moon in all her digits, rising in conjunction with the constellation Krittika.

19. His elephant blinded with shedding ichor, appeared like a mass of black antimony and like a mighty mountain washed by the downpour of rain from thick clouds.

20. He was also surrounded by many a war-like sovereign of mountain lands, armed with various weapons, and he resembled Sakra himself encompassed by the celestials.

21. Beholding that superhuman array invincible in battle by the enemies, king Yudhishthira spoke these words to the son of Prishata.

22. "O mighty warrior, O you who own steeds white as the pigeons, do you adopt such measures so that I may not this day be subjugated by the Brahmana (Drona).

Dhristadyumna said :—

23. O you of chaste vows, you shall never be subjugated by Drona however much he may strive. To-day I myself will resist Drona and all his followers.

24. O descendant of Kuru's race, it behoves you not to feel anxious so long as I am alive. Drona shall never be able to vanquish me in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

25. Having thus spoken, the highly puissant son of Drupada the owner of pigeon-white steeds, scattering arrows (on all direction) himself rushed at Drona.

26. Beholding evil omen in the person of Dhristadyumna stationed before him, for a while Drona became all but chereful.

27. Seeing this, your son Durmukha that grinder of foes, desirous of doing an act agreeable to Drona, set himself to oppose Dhristadyumna.

28. Then, O Bharata, ensued a terrible and dreadful battle between the war-like son of Prishata and the heroic Durmukha.

29. The son of Prishata, speedily covering Durmukha with his net-work of arrows, checked the career of the son of Bharadwaja with a thick shower of shafts.

30. Seeing Drona covered, your son quickly came to his help and confounded the son of Prishata, with a downpour of arrows of various appearance.

31. When the prince of the Panchalas and the foremost of the Kurus were thus engaged in battle, Drona crushed, with his arrows, diverse divisions of Yudhishthira's army.

32. Just as masses of clouds are torn into pieces by the vehemence of the wind, so the army belonging to the son of Priha was shattered at many places.

33. For a short while only, O monarch, that engagement was agreeable to look at ; after which it became like the battle of demented persons in which no consideration was made in favour of any one.

34. The combatants were no longer able to distinguish between their own men and their enemies; and the battle raged, the warriors being guided by conjecture and watch-words.

35. On the gems embossed on their head-gears, on their necklaces, ornaments and armours, rays of light, like the rays of the sun, were seen to be reflected.

36. Then in that battle, the cars, the elephants, and the horses, adorned with fluttering pennons looked like masses of cloud having rows of cranes ranging beneath them.

37. Men slew men and mettled steeds slew other steeds, and car-warriors slew car-

warriors and mighty elephants, slew other elephant.

38. And in a moment a dreadful battle raged between elephants bearing raised standards and their powerful rivals rushing at them.

39. And in consequence of those prodigious creatures rushing against one another and tearing another with their tusks, fire and smoke were engendered there by such friction of bodies and clashing of tusks.

40. Deprived of the flag-staffs on their backs, those elephants, owing to the fire enkindled by the friction of their tusks, appeared like masses of clouds charged with lightning covering the skies.

41. The earth, over-spread with dragging (their rivals) and falling and roaring elephants, appeared like the autumnal clouds.

42. There arose a roar, emitted by those elephants when they were being slaughtered by showers of shafts and spears, that resembled the rumbling of clouds during a cyclone.

43. Some of those huge elephants being struck with arrows and some with lances, were inspired with panic, and others began to roar aloud.

44. Some elephants being struck by others with their tusks gave out fierce roars of distress that resembled the rumbling of all-destructive clouds (at the end of a Yuga).

45. Some elephants turned back by powerful rivals, being urged on by the strokes of the hooks, again returned to the charge, crushing the hostile ranks (in their march).

46. Elephant-drivers assaulted other elephant-drivers with shafts and lances; and they fell down on the ground from their respective elephants and lost hold of their weapons and hooks.

47. Many elephants, deprived of the riders on their backs, coursed wildly hither and thither resembling clouds torn from prodigious masses, and they fell down, encountering one another.

48. Bearing on their backs slain and fallen warriors or those whose weapons had fallen off their grasps, huge elephants roamed in all direction as if deprived of their mates.

49. Then in that carnage, elephants fell down uttering distressful roars, being pierced or in the act of being pierced with lances, swords and battle axes.

50. Struck with the falling carcasses of elephants huge like large mountains, the

earth suddenly quaked and emitted loud sound.

51. The ground, strewn with mangled elephants and their drivers and with broken standards appeared as if it were covered over with hills.

52. In that battle elephant-drivers riding on their respective beasts, and their beasts torn with broad-headed shafts by car-warriors of might, fell scattering their lances and hooks on all sides.

53. Other elephants, smitten with long-shafts, gave forth crane-like cries and ran on all sides, crushing friends and foes alike.

54. Strewn with carcasses and corpses of elephants, horses, car-warriors and heroes, the field, O monarch, became miry with flesh and blood.

55. Huge cars with wheels and without wheels and having their riders on, were thrown up by elephants, being smashed with the point of their tusks.

56. Cars without riders, steeds deprived of their riders, and elephants having their drivers slain, ran in all directions being overwhelmed with panic.

57. In that battle, father slew his son and son slew his father; thus raged the fierce fight in which nothing could be distinguished.

58. In that gory mire men sank ankle-deep; and they looked like mighty trees the lower portion of which were enveloped in a forest conflagration.

59. Their garments and coats of mail and umbrellas and standards being steeped in blood, everything in that battle appeared to be crimson.

60. Large bodies of fallen steeds and car-warriors and men were again hacked into pieces by rolling car-wheels.

61. That sea of troops appeared vested with a terrible beauty, having elephants for its strong currents, slain warriors for its floating moss, and (shattered) cars for its fearful eddies.

62. Warriors desirous of the wealth of victory launching into that sea on board the vessels consisting of their respective vehicles, produced stupefaction in their enemies instead of themselves sinking down to the bottom.

63. When all the warriors having proper individual devices (of heraldry) were covered over with showers of arrows, none among them lost heart, though every body was deprived of his particular badge.

64. When that fierce and panic-inspiring battle was thus raging, Drona confound-

ing the senses of his enemies, at last rushed at Yudhishthira.

Thus ends the twentieth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXI.

(SAMSAPATA-BADHA PARVA)

continued

Sanjaya said:—

1. Seeing Yudhishthira approach him, Drona received him with a continuous down-pour of arrows, like one undaunted.

2. Thereupon a very great confusion arose in the army of Yudhishthira which resembled that which prevails in a herd of elephants when the leader is attacked by a lion.

3. Then the heroic Satyajit of prowess invincible, beholding Drona the preceptor desirous of capturing Yudhishthira, rushed at him with fury.

4. Then the war-like Acharyya and the prince of the Panchalas fought with one another, agitating the armies hostile to each, like Indra and the son of Virochana.

5. Then the mighty warrior Satyajit of prowess invincible, displaying excellent weapons, pierced Drona with a keen-pointed shaft.

6. Thereafter he discharged at the charioteers of Drona, five arrows deadly as the venom of snakes, and each resembling Death himself. (Struck by those arrows) the charioteer lost all consciousness.

7. Then he suddenly pierced Drona's horses with ten swift-going-arrows. Thereafter wrought up with ire, he pierced the two Parshni-drivers of Drona with ten shafts each.

8. Then at the head of his division, he wheeled in circular motion riding on his chariot. Then filled with rage he cut down the flag-staff of Drona, the grinder of foes.

9. Then that crusher of foes, Drona, seeing these feats of his enemy in battle, thought in his mind that his (foe's) hour was come.

10. Then having severed the bow of his enemy Satyajit (along with arrows placed on it, the preceptor Drona pierced him with ten whetted shafts capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

11. Thereupon that puissant hero (Satyajit), O monarch, having speedily grasped another bow, struck Drona with thirty arrows furnished with Kanka-feathers.

12. Beholding Drona thus resisted in that battle by Satyajit, O monarch, the Pandavas shouted forth and waived their garments.

13. Inflamed with wrath, the mighty Vriki pierced Drona on the chest with six shafts. O king, that feat appeared, indeed, marvellous.

14. Then that mighty car-warrior Drona, endued with great speed, being completely covered by an arrowy downpour, put forth all his energy causing his eyes to expand with rage.

15. Thereafter Drona, having cut asunder the bows of Satyajit and Vriki, killed the latter along with his driver and horses, with six shafts.

16. Thereafter Satyajit having taken up a bow still tougher, pierced Drona, along with his steeds, drivers and standard, with several shafts.

17. Humiliated in battle by the prince of the Panchalas, Drona was no longer able to brook it then for the destruction of his enemy, he speedily shot shafts at him.

18. Then pouring arrows by thousands, Drona covered the steeds, the standards, the handle of the bow and the two *Parshni*-drivers of his enemy.

19. In spite of his bows being thus repeatedly cut off, the prince of the Panchalas conversant with the knowledge of excellent weapons, continued to fight with him of the chestnut steeds (Drona).

20. Then beholding Satyajit swell with energy in that battle, Drona with a half-moon-shaped arrow, severed the head of that one of illustrious soul.

21. When that mighty car-warrior the leader of the Panchalis was slain, Yudhishthira being afraid of Drona, fled away, being borne by fleet steeds.

22. The Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, the Chedis, the Karusas and the Kosalas, desirous of rescuing Yudhishthira, rushed at Drona with delight.

23. Thereupon, the preceptor, the crusher of large bodies of foes, desirous of capturing Yudhishthira, consumed those troops like fire consuming heaps of cotton.

24. Then Satanika the younger brother of the king of the Matsyas, seeing Drona repeatedly consume the divisions, rushed at him.

25. Then deeply piercing Drona and his charioteer and steeds, with six shafts effulgent like the rays of the sun and polished by the forgers, Satanika uttered loud shouts.

26. Engaged in a heartless act and attempting to accomplish a difficult one, he covered the mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadwaja, with an arrowy down-pour.

27. Then Drona, with a whiff like a razor speedily severed from his trunk, the head graced with ear-rings, of Satanika thus roaring at him. Thereat all the Matsyas took to their heels.

28. Having vanquished the Matsyas, the son of Bharadwaja obtained victory over the Chedis, the Karusas, the Kekayas, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, and the Pandus.

29. Beholding that one of the golden car, endued with bravery, excited with wrath, consume their divisions like fire burning down a forest, the Srinjayas trembled.

30. The twang of the bowstring of that one of great activity was heard in all directions, when he stretched his bow to slay his enemies.

31. Fierce arrows, discharged by that one endued with great lightness of hands, crushed elephants and steeds and foot-soldiers, car-warriors and warriors riding on elephants.

32. As at the expiration of the Winter, mighty masses of thundering rain-clouds assisted by violent winds, pour down showers of rain, so Drona pouring showers of arrows, struck terror into the hearts of his opponents.

33. That puissant hero, that mighty warrior, that giver of assurances of safety to his friends, traversed in all directions, agitating the host of the enemy.

34. The bow of golden effulgence of Drona of immeasurable prowess was seen in all directions, like flashes of lightning illumining the clouds.

35. As he creered with speed in that battle, the device of an altar decorating his banner, O Bharata, appeared like the crest of the Himalayas.

36. Drona caused a dreadful carnage among the host of the Pandavas, like that which Vishnu the reared of all the celestials and the Asuras, caused among the host of the latter.

37. That hero of truthful speech endowed with great wisdom and strength, and endued with invincible prowess, that Drona of generous heart, created a river on the field of battle, that was dreadful and capable of enhancing the fear of the towards. Armours constituted its bellows and standards its whirlpools; and it carried away a large number of mortals as it flowed. Elephants and horses formed its great alligators and swords were its fishes,

and it was incapable of being tided over. It was terrible-looking and the bones of heroes formed the pebbles (in its bed) and drums and cymbals its tortoises. Shields and armours constituted its boats and the hair of warriors the moss and weeds that floated over it. Shafts constituted its wavelets, and bows its currents; and it abounded in snakes formed of the arms of warriors. It was of fierce current and carried away the Kurus and the Srinjayas alike. The heads of human beings formed its stones, and their thighs its fishes, and the maces its rafts; it was covered with froth formed of head-gears, and was infested with reptiles formed of the entrails (of animals) of awful appearance; it carried away heroes (to the other world); its mire was constituted by flesh and blood. Elephants were its alligators and standards the trees (on its banks). It drew down in its bottom thousands of Kshatriyas. It was fierce, clogged with corpses, and had horse-soldiers for its sharks; and it was extremely difficult of being crossed over; and it flowed to the regions of Death.

44. That river swarmed with hosts of monsters and dogs and jackals. It was haunted by cannibals of dreadful appearance on all sides.

45. Thereupon seeing that mighty car-warrior Drona consume their hosts like the god of Death himself, the Pandava warriors headed by the sons of Kunti, rushed at him from all sides.

46. Firmly united together, those heroes surrounded Drona on all sides who was burning down every thing, like the sun scorching the world with his rays.

47. Then for supporting that heroic warrior, with upraised weapons, your warriors, princes and monarchs, rushed (into the thick of the fight).

48. Then Sikhandin pierced Drona with five straight-jointed shafts, Kshatradharma with twenty, and Vasudeva with five.

49. Uttamoujas in that battle, pierced him with three shafts, Kshatradharm with five, Satyaki with hundred and Yudhamanyu with eight.

50. Yudhisthira pierced Drona with a dozen shaft, and Dhrishtadyumna pierced him with ten and Chekitana with three shafts.

51. Then Drona of never-failing aim and resembling an elephant with rent temples, passing over the car host of the Pandavas, felled Dhriseseu.

52. Then getting near king Kshema, who was fighting fearlessly, Drona pierced

him with nine arrows, and he fell down dead from his chariot.

53. Penetrating into the heart of the (hostile) host, resisted in all directions, he became the protector of all others, and had no need of protecting himself.

54. He then struck Sikhandin with twelve arrows and Uttamoujas with twenty shafts. And with a broad-headed arrow he despatched Vasudeva to the regions of Death.

55. With eighty shafts he pierced Kshemavarman, and with twenty-six he struck Sudakshina. With broad-headed shafts he brought down Kshetradharm from the terrace of his car.

56. Having pierced Yudhamanyu with sixty-four shafts and Satyaki with thirty, that one owning the golden chariot rushed at Yudhisthira with violence.

57. Then that foremost of kings Yudhisthira speedily fled away from the preceptor being borne by his fleet steeds. Then the prince of the Panchalas charged Drona.

58. Drona struck him along with his horses, charioteer and bow. Then from his car he fell down dead like a luminary dropped from the heaven.

59. Upon the death of that renowned prince of the Panchalas, loud cries of 'kill Drona, kill Drona' were heard there.

60. Then that puissant Drona began to crush the host of the Panchalas, the Matsyas the Kekayas, the Srinjayas, the Pandavas, all burning with rage.

61. Satyaki, Chekitan, Dhrishtadyumna and Sikhandin, Vardakshemi, the son of Chitrasena and Senavindu, and Suvorcha.

62. These and numerous other rulers of different countries, were all defeated by Drona who was supported by the Kurus.

63. O Monarch, your warriors having been crowned with victory in that dreadful battle began to slaughter the Pandavas as they were flying in all directions.

64. O Bharata, the Panchalas, the Kekayas, and the Matsyas, thus slaughtered on all sides, like the Danavas by Indra, began to quake (with fear).

Thus ends the twenty-first chapter, the fight of Drona, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXII.

(SAMSAPATAKA-BADHA PARVA)—

*Continued.***Dhritarastra said :—**

1. When in that fierce fight, the son of Bharadwaja had shattered the host of the Pandavas and the Panchalas, did any one else approach him for battle?

2—5. Alas, seeing Drona stationed in battle, like an yawning tiger or an elephant with rent temples, prepared to sacrifice his life in fight, clad in coat of mail, proficient in all modes of warfare, that illustrious bowman, that foremost of men, that producer of apprehensions in his enemies, grateful, devoted to truth, always desirous of doing good to Duryodhana,—alas seeing him stationed at the head of his forces, did any one meet him with a praiseworthy determination for fight,—determination that invests Kshatriyas with renown, that cowards can not form, and that distinguishes the foremost of men? Relate to me, O Sanjaya, who were those heroic warriors, that encountered the son of Bharadwaja, seeing him stationed at the head of his army?

Sanjaya said :—

6. Seeing the Panchalas, the Pandavas, the Matsyas, the Srinjayas, the Chedis and the Kekayas, fly from the field having been broken in their ranks by the shafts of Drona,

7. Seeing them thus routed by those thick showers of swift-falling arrows discharged from the bow of Drona, like frail barks driven adrift by the surging bellows of the mighty main,

8. The Kouravas uttering many loud war-cries, and with the sound of many other musical instruments, impeded the flight of the chariots, the elephants and the men (of the hostile host) on all sides.

9. Beholding them (the routed army), king Duryodhana standing in the midst of his own troops and surrounded by his own kinsmen greatly delighted, smilingly said these words to Karna.

Duryodhana said :—

10. Behold, O son of Radha, the ranks of the Panchalas shattered by the shafts of Drona, the resolute bowman, like a herd of wild deer frightened by a lion.

11. Meseems they will never again seek to fight, in as much as they are now broken by Drona like mighty trees broken by the tempest.

12. Afflicted by the gold-winged shafts of the illustrious Drona, they are flying

away by diverse paths; and they seem to whirl round and round.

13. Impeded by the Kouravas and by the high-souled Drona, they are huddling together, like a herd of elephants encompassed in a conflagration.

14. Like a tree penetrated by a cluster of bees, they are being pierced by the keen-pointed arrows of Drona; they are huddling together as they are hastening away from the field of battle.

15. O Karna, there the highly enraged Bhima, forsaken by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, and surrounded by my own warriors, affords great joy to me.

16. With certitude, that fool to-day beholds the world full of Drona. Surely that son of Pandu has to-day become hopeless of his life and his kingdom.

Karna said :—

17. Never will this mighty-armed hero abandon fighting so long life will remain in him; nor will this foremost of men brook the war-cries of others.

18. I think also, that the Pandavas, brave, endued with might, learned in the use of weapons, and invincible in battle, will never be routed in battle.

19. Remembering the woes inflicted on them by our attempts at poisoning and burning them, and by our defeating them at dice, as also bearing in mind the hardships they had to undergo in their exile in the woods, the Pandavas, I think, will never abandon battle.

20. Already the mighty-armed Vrikodara of immeasurable prowess, has turned back; this son of Kunti will now certainly slay many foremost of our car-warriors.

21. He will slay crowds upon crowds of our host, using his sword, bow, darts, iron mace, and horses, elephants, men and chariots as implements for striking.

22. Car-warriors headed by Satyaki, and the Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, and specially the Pandavas, are following him (in battle).

23. Those mighty car-warriors, brave, endued with strength and prowess, are again urged on to battle, by the wrathful Bhima.

24. Those foremost of the Kurus desirous of supporting Vrikodara, are surrounding Drona on all sides, like the clouds surrounding the sun.

25. Inspired with a singleness of purpose, they will surely afflict the unprotected Drona of resolute vows, like flights of insects about to die afflicting a burning lamp.

26. Accomplished in the use of weapons, certainly they are capable of encountering the son of Bharadwaja. I consider the burden now devolving on him to be very heavy.

27. Let us then swiftly repair to the spot where Drona is stationed. Let not the Pandavas slay Drona, like a pack of wolves slaying a mighty elephant.

Sanjaya said:—

28. O monarch, bearing the words of the son of Radha, king Duryodhana, with his brothers rushed where the car of Drona was.

29. Then there arose a mighty uproar caused by the Pandava warriors, who actuated by the desire for slaying the unsupported Drona had all returned to the field, riding on best steeds of various colours.

Thus ends the twenty-second chapter, the fight of Drona, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXIII.

SAMSAPATA-BADHA PARVA—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Describe to me, O Sanjaya, the distinctive marks of the cars of all those heroes, who, wrought up with rage and headed by Bhishma, then rushed at Drona.

Sanjaya said:—

2. Seeing Vrikodara rush into battle, (on a car drawn by steeds of chappled hue) the heroic grandson of Sini advanced, being borne by steeds of the colour of silver.

3. Inflamed with ire, the invincible Yudhamanyu proceeded towards the car of Drona, being borne by excellent steeds of variegated hue.

4. The son of the ruler of the Panchalas, namely Dhristadyumna, proceeded, being borne by steeds of great fleetness, caparisoned with gold trappings and of the hue of pigeons.

5. Desirous of supporting his father (Dhristadyumna) and wishing his complete success, Kshatrakarma of regulated vows followed (in a car drawn by chestnut steeds).

6. Kshatrakarma, the son of Sikhandin, himself urging well-trapped steeds of the hue of lotus-leaves, and with pure white eyes, advanced towards Drona.

7. Steeds of the Kamboja breed beautiful to look at and decked with the feathers of the Suka bird, bearing Nakula, quickly made against your army.

8. O Bharata, delighted steeds of the colour of clouds, inflamed with rage, bore Uttamoujasa to battle against the invincible Drona who was standing with arrows fixed (on the bow-string.)

9. Steeds of the fleetness of wind and of variegated hue, carried Sahadeva with uplifted arms to that dreadful battle.

10. Steeds of the hue of the tusks of elephants, of the fleetness of wind, of black mein and of great impetuosity, carried king Yudhishthira, the foremost of men.

11. Riding on horses caparisoned with gold trappings, and all fleet as the wind, many warriors followed Yudhishthira.

12. After king Yudhishthira, came Dru-pada, the ruler of the Panchalas, with a golden umbrella held over his head and himself protected by all those soldiers.

13. That mighty warrior among all monarchs, namely, Santabhi, advanced, borne by excellent steeds capable of putting up with every noise.

14. Accompanied by various mighty car-warriors, Virata speedily followed him. The Kekayas, and Sikhandin, and Dhristaketu.

15-17. Surrounded by their respective forces, followed the king of the Matsyas. Excellent steeds of the colour of trumpet-flowers bearing this latter, appeared very beautiful. Fleet steeds decked with golden chains and resembling turmeric in colour, appeared highly beautiful as they carried the son of that slayer of foes, namely, Virata the royal chief of the Matsya. The five Kekaya brothers were borne by horses of crimson colour.

18. All these heroes accomplished in battle, having complexions effulgent like gold, owning standards of red hue, and bedecked with golden chains,

19-20. Were seen, clad in mail, and showering arrows, like the clouds showering (torrents of) rain. Steeds of the hue of ivory and that of unbaked earthenware pots, carried Sikhandin, the Panchala prince of immeasurable energy. In all, twelve thousand mighty car-warriors of the Panchala race proceeded in battle.

21. Of these twelve thousands, six thousand followed Sikhandin. O sire, the son of Sisupala, the foremost of men,

22. Was borne by sportive steeds of the hue of antilopes. Dhristaketu, the foremost of the Chedis, endued with great prowess,

23—24. And invincible in battle, was carried by horses of Kamvoja breed and of variegated hue. Excellent steeds of the Sindhu breed, of beautiful limbs and of the colour of the smoke emitted by burning straws, quickly bore the prince of the Kekayas, namely, Vrihatskshatra. Possessed of eyes of the hue of jasmine, of lotus-hue, of Valhika breed, and decked with gold trappings, such steeds

25. Bore the heroic son of Sikhandin viz., Kshatradeva. Decorated with caparison of gold, and of the hue of silk, steeds,

26. Of quiet nature, bore into battle Senavindu, that chastiser of foes. Excellent steeds of the colour of cream, carried into battle the youthful,

27—28. Delicate and mighty car-warrior, the son of the king of the Kasis. White horses, having black necks, and endued with the fleetness of the mind, and obedient to the (reins of the) driver, O monarch, bore prince Prativindhya. Steeds of the hue of the *Musa* flower carried in battle Sutasoma, the son of Partha, whom the latter had obtained through (the favour of) Soma.

29. Of the radiance of a thousand Moons, he was born in the city of the Kurus, known as Udayendu. In as much as, in an assembly of the *Somas* he won great renown, he came to be styled Sutasoma.

30. Steeds, resembling the flower of the *Sala* in hue, and radiant like the rising sun, bore the glorious son of Nakula, by name Satanika.

31. Decked with caparisons of gold, and possessed of the hue of the peacock's neck, steeds bore in battle, that foremost of men *Srutakarma*, the son of Droupadi (by *Bhima*).

32. Excellent steeds of the colour of the feathers of the kingfisher, carried into battle, *Srutakirti*, the son of Droupadi, who was equal to Partha, in his knowledge of the *Srutis*.

33. Tawny-coloured steeds bore in battle prince *Ablimanyu*, who is said to be one and a half time superior in battle to both *Krishna* and *Partha*.

34. Huge-bodied steeds bore to battle *Yuyutsu*, who alone, among the sons of *Dhrतराstra*, had sided with the *Pandavas*, (deserting his own brothers).

35. Steeds, plump, decked with golden caparisons, and of the hue of the stalk of paddy, bore to that dreadful battle, *Var-dhakshemi* of great activity.

36. Steeds, having black legs, caparisoned with golden breast-plates, and

obedient to the driver, bore to battle, the youthful *Souchithi*.

37. Quiet steeds of the hue of red silk, decked with chains of gold, and having their backs covered with armour of the same metal, bore *Srenimat*.

38. Crimson steeds bore the assaulting *Satyadhriti*, who was proficient in the sciences dealing with the use of weapons and the bow and also in the divine *Vedas*.

39. He that was the commander of the *Panchala* forces, and that considered *Drona* to be the victim destined to fall by his hand, that *Dhristadyumna* was borne by steeds of the hue of pigeons.

40. *Satyadhriti* and *Souchithi* both irrepressible in battle followed him, as also *Srenimat*, *Vasudana*, and *Vibhu* the son of the ruler of *Kasis*.

41. These were borne by fleet steeds of the best *Kamvoja* breed, decked with chains of gold. Resembling *Yama*, or *Vaisravana*, they proceeded striking terror into the hearts of his enemies.

42. The *Pravadrakas* of the *Kamvoja* country, six thousand strong, with uplifted arms, with excellent steeds of various hues, with gold-decked standards mounted on their cars,

43. With their stretched bows discharging arrows that produced confusion in the hostile host, and with a determination to die together, followed *Dhristadyumna*.

44. Excellent steeds of the hue of yellow silk, decorated with beautiful chains of gold cheerfully bore *Chekitana*.

45. Borne by excellent steeds of the best breed, and of the colour of rainbow, came *Kuntibhoja* or *Puruji* the maternal uncle of *Savyasachin*.

46. Steeds of the appearance of the star-studded firmament, bore king *Rochamana* to battle.

47. Steeds of the colour of the red deer having white stripes all over their body, bore the prince of the *Panchalas*, the son of *Gapati*, by name *Singhasena*.

48. Excellent steeds of the hue of the mustard flowers belonged to that foremost among the *Panchalas*, who was well known as *Janamejaya*.

49. Fleet, huge-bodied steeds of the hue of *Masa*, decked with gold chains, with backs white like the hue of curds and faces beautiful like the moon, speedily bore the ruler of the *Panchalas*.

50. Brave and gentle steeds resembling reed-stalks, and of the hue of the palms of the lotus, bore *Dandadhara*.

31. Steeds, of the hue of donkeys, with backs of the hue of mice, and with necks proudly drawn up, bore Vyagradatta.

52. Dark-spotted steeds, decorated with beautiful garlands, bore that foremost of men Sudhanwan, the prince of the Pan-chalas.

53. Steeds of the impetuosity of Indra's thunderbolt, of the hue of the *Indragopakas*, and variegated with patches, bore Chitrayudha.

54. Decorated with golden garlands, and having bellies of the hue of the *Chakravaka*, steeds bore the son of the ruler of the Kosalas, by name Sukshatra.

55. Excellent and tall steeds, of huge bodies, variegated hue, exceedingly docile and caparisoned with golden chains, bore Satyadhriti accomplished in battle.

56. Sukla proceeded to battle with standards, armour, bow and steeds, all of the same white colour.

57. Ocean-bred steeds of the hue of the moon, bore Chandrasena of fierce energy, the son of Srudrasena.

58. Steeds of the hue of the blue lotus, and decked with ornaments of gold, and adorned with beautiful garlands of flower, bore to battle Saiva owning a beautiful chariot.

59. Excellent steeds of the hue of the *Kalava* flower, covered with red and white stripes, bore to battle Rathasena difficult to be repressed in battle.

60. Steeds of the hue of the blue parrot, bore that king who had slain the Pattacharas, and who was regarded as the best hero among all men.

16. Superior steeds of hue resembling that of the *Kinsuka* flowers, bore Chitrayudha, decorated with beautiful garlands, and owning beautiful armour, weapons and standard.

62. King Nila proceeded to battle, with standards, armour, bow and steeds, all of the same blue colour.

63. Chitra advanced to battle, with car-fence and standard and bow, all set with various kinds of gems, and with excellent steeds and beautiful banners and banner-staffs.

64. Excellent steeds that resembled in colour the hue of the *Pushaka* flower, bore Hemvarna the son of Rochamana.

65. Mettled chargers of gentle appearance, possessed of vertebral columns erect like reed-stalks, having white testes and endowed with the colour of the hen's eggs, bore Dandaketu.

66—70. The heroic Sarangadwaja endowed with the wealth of energy, the ruler of the Pandyas, mounted on chargers of the colour of the moon-beams, and clad in coats of mail set with lapises, rushed at Drona stretching his bow of superior make. His dominions having been invaded, and his relatives having escaped, his sire had been slain, O monarch, in battle by Krishna; securing weapons then from Bhishma, Drona, and Rama, and Kripa, he became, in the use of weapons, equal to Rukmi, Karṇa, Arjuna and Achyuta. He then became intent on destroying the city of Dwarka, and on subjugating the whole world. But his wise friends out of a desire to do good to him, prevented him from that course. Abandoning all thoughts of revenge, he is now ruling his own dominions.

71. Steeds of the hue of the *Atarusha* flower bore one hundred and forty thousand foremost car-warriors who followed that king of the Pandya.

72. Chargers of various hues and appearance and stature and face, bore the heroic Ghatotkacha, the device on whose banner was a car-wheel.

73. Setting at naught the opinions of the assembled Bhāritas, that prince who alone out of his reverence for Yudhishthira had sided with him abandoning all his cherished hopes,

74. That mighty-armed Vrihantra of red eyes was borne by huge-bodied, greatly powerful steeds, as he sat in his chariot.

75. Excellent steeds of the hue of gold followed behind the virtuous Yudhishthira, that foremost of kings, as he advanced on his car.

76. Hosts of the *Pravadiikas* of divine appearance, proceeded to battle, on superior chargers of various beautiful colors.

77. All of them possessing golden standards, full of energy and accompanied by Bhimasena, appeared, O monarch, like the celestials headed by Indra.

78. Dhristadyumna liked that assembled host very much. But the son of Bharadwaja, excelled the rest of the warriors in splendour.

79. O monarch, his standard, with a black deerskin fluttering from its top and bearing the beautiful waterpot, and made of the finest gold, appeared exceedingly beautiful.

80. The standard of Bhimasena bearing the device of a mighty lion in silver, with two eyes of the *lapis lazuli*, appeared highly resplendent.

81. The standard of Yudhishthira endowed with great energy bearing the emblem of the golden moon surrounded by the planets, looked exceedingly charming.

82. Two prodigious *Mridangas* of celestial make called *Nanda* and *Upanundaka* were tied to it. Struck by mechanical arrangements, they emitted melodies that enhanced the joy of all.

83. For striking terror into the hearts of the enemy, we saw that tall and fierce standard of Nakula, mounted on his ear, that bore the device of Sarabha having golden back.

84. On the standard of Sahadeva, was seen a charming swan of irrepressible might made of silver, decked with bells, and banners, and capable of enhancing the grief of the enemy.

85. The standards of the five sons of Draupadi bore as their device the beautiful images of Dharma, Maruta, Sakra, and of the twin Aswins of high-soul.

86. On the ear of the youthful Abhimanyu, O monarch, there was a standard of best make, bearing the device of a golden peacock, which was as radiant as molten gold.

87. O monarch, the device of a vulture enhanced the beauty of the standard of Ghatotkacha; his steeds had the power of ranging everywhere at will, like those of Ravana in days of yore.

88. In the hands of Yudhishthira was the bow called *Mahendra* of celestial make; the celestial *Vyavya* was, O king, in the hands of Bhimasena.

89. For preserving the triune world *Brahma* had created a bow; that bow of celestial make and ever indestructible, was in the hands of *Phalgun*.

90. The *Vaishnava* bow was wielded by Nakula and the bow *Aswina* by Sahadeva; the Poulasta of terrible appearance and celestial make, was held by Ghatotkacha.

91. O Bharata, these five jewels of bows, namely the *Rudra*, the *Agneya*, the *Kouverya*, the *Yamya* and the *Garisha* were held by the five sons of Draupadi.

92. That foremost of bows of best make called *Rudra* which the son of Rohini had obtained, that bow was given, out of delight, to the high-souled son of Subhadra, by Rama.

93. These and many other standards, decked with gold, of heroic warriors were seen there, that enhanced the grief of the foes.

94. Then, O monarch, the host led by Drona, which abounded in myriads of standards and which numbered not a single coward, looked like images painted on canvas.

95. Then in that battle we heard, O monarch, the names and lineage of various heroic warriors, as they rushed at Drona, like to what is heard at a *Swayamvara*.

Thus ends the twenty-third chapter, the description of standards &c., in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXIV.

(SAMSAPTAKA BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. O Sanjaya, those heroic sovereigns who now returned to the charge, being headed by Vrikodara, were capable of crushing even the host of the celestials themselves.

2. Led by Destiny, man surely engages in any action, and it is through the decrees of Destiny that his various acts are attended with various results.

3. That Yudhishthira, who wandered exiled in the woods, for a long time, wearing matted locks and black deer-skin and who also had to wander *incognito*,

4. Even that very Yudhishthira is now leading this mighty host in battle! What else but evil, can befall my son through this adverse influence of Destiny?

5. Surely man is born subject to the decrees of Destiny; and so he is compelled by it to do what he does not at all desire.

6. Becoming addicted to the vice of gambling at dice, Yudhishthira reaped great affliction; but now through the agency of Destiny, he has again been united to his supporters.

7. 'To-day the Kekayass are rallying to me; the Kousikas, the Kosalas, the Chedis, the Vangas and others are all betaking to me.'

8. All this extensive earth has taken my side, O sire, and not that of the sons of Pritha. O Suta, these were the words that were spoken to me by the wicked Duryodhana before.

9. Drona, guarded amidst this host of his warriors, was slain by the son of Prisata in battle; what can it be but the decree of Fate?

10. Amidst that royal host how could Death approach that mighty-armed Drona who ever delighted in battle, and who was accomplished in the use of all sorts of weapons?

11. I am plunged in distress and a swoon overwhelms me. Oh, I can not live hearing both Bhishma and Drona slain.

12. O Suta, that which the prophetic Khatwa said to me, seeing me, infatuated with the affection for my son, O sire, everything of that has now overtaken me and Duryodhana himself.

13. It would have been very cruel had I saved the rest of my progeny by abandoning Duryodhana, but then the rest could have lived.

14. The monarch, that abandoning righteousness, pursues interest, is debarred from the enjoyment of felicity and imbibes meanness.

15. O Sanjaya, to-day, when the hump of this kingdom has been crushed, I see that nothing will be left of it, as it has lost all energy (by the death of Drona.)

16. When those two foremost of men, viz. Bhishma and Drona of forgiving nature who used to be our primary support, when they both have been killed, how can any thing remain of this kingdom?

17. Relate to me, in detail, as to how that battle raged; who were they that fought, who assaulted (the enemy) and what mean fellows fled, out of terror?

18. Tell me also what that foremost of car-warriors, namely, Dhananjaya, did? We are much afraid of him and of his brother, Vrikodara, who is our (implacable) enemy.

19. Tell me, O Sanjaya, of the terrible collision that took place between the Pandava hosts and the remnant of my army, when the former returned to the charge?

20. What also, O sire, was the state of your mind when they returned to the attack. What heroes of our army withstood them on the field of battle?

Thus ends the twenty-fourth chapter, the words of Dhritarashtra, in the Samsaptakabadha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXV.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. When the Pandava host returned to the battle, a mighty apprehension took pos-

session of ourselves covered (by the arrows) like the lustrous rob covered over by a (continuous) mass of rain-clouds.

2. Thick clouds of dust raised by them covered over your army, and our sight being intercepted, we thought Drona to be slain.

3. Beholding those mighty and heroic warriors intent on the perpetration of a very heartless act (i.e., the slaughter of Drona), Duryodhana encouraged his troops without the least delay, saying:—

4. "O rulers of men, do you check the Pandava host, according to your strength^h energy, and prowess and according to the opportunities that may present themselves."

5. Thereafter, your son Durinarsana beholding Bhima near him, fell upon him; and desirous of saving Drona's life, he covered the latter with a downpour of arrows.

6. Wrought up with ire, he assaulted Bhima with his arrows, even like Dea h himself in that battle. Bhima also pierced him with arrows and thus a fierce combat raged between them.

7. In that battle, heroic warriors endowed with prudence, and accomplished in smiting, being commanded by their leaders withstood their adversaries, disregarding of their kingdom and the fear of death.

8—9. Like one infuriate elephant resisting another, Kritavarman checked the grandson of Sini. That fierce bowman, the ruler of the Sindhus, with his keen-pointed shafts kept the mighty warriors Kshatra varman away from Drona, as the former advanced towards the latter. Kshatravarman cutting down the bow and banner of the ruler of the Sindhus,

10. And excited with wrath, pierced him in his vitals with ten *Narachas*. Thereupon the ruler of the Sindhus, with an admirable lightness of hand, taking up another bow,

11—14. Pierced Kshatravarman in that battle with arrows, all made of iron. With all his endeavours, Suvahu kept away from Drona, his brother, the mighty and heroic car-warrior Yuyutsu, who was fighting for the Pandavas. Yuyutsu cut off with two whetted and well-tempered and razor-like arrows, the two arms of Suvahu which were wielding the bow and the arrows and which resembled a couple of bludgeons. The ruler of the Madras, resisted king Yudhishthira of righteous soul, that foremost of the Pandavas, like the banks resisting the agitated ocean. Him the righteous king Yudhishthira covered with many shafts capable of penetrating into the very vitals.

15—17. The lord of the Madras piercing Yudhisthira with sixty-four arrows uttered a loud war cry; but while the former was still roaring, with two razor sharp arrows, the foremost of the Pandavas severed his bow and banner. At this the warriors shouted forth (in joy). Then king Vaidika also at the head of his army, resirited, with his arrows, king Drupada as the latter was advancing leading a formidable division. Thereat between those two old men supported by their respective army, a fierce encounter raged,

18—21. Which resembled that between two mighty leaders, with rent temples, of two different herds of elephants. Vindha and Anvindu of the Avanti country, at the head of their army, encountered Virata, the ruler of the Matsyas, at the head of his troops, like Indra and Agni encountering the Danava Vali, in the days of yore. Then between the Matsyas and the Kekayas a confused combat raged in which the horses, warriors, the car-warriors and the elephant-warriors fought undauntedly, and which resembled the encounter between the celestials and the Asuras. Bhutakarma, the ruler of the Savas, kept away from Drona, Nakula's son, Satanika, as the latter advanced discharging a net-work of arrows. Thereat the son of Nakula with three well-sharpened *Vallas* (broad-headed arrows),

22—26. Made Bhutakarma headless and armless in that battle. Vivinsati checked the heroic Sutasoma endued with prowess, as he was advancing towards Drona discharging innumerable shafts. Sutasoma also excited with anger and clad in mail pierced his uncle Vivinsati with straight-going shafts, and he desisted from attacking the latter. Then Bhimaratha, with six swift-going shafts, made wholly of iron, despatched Salwa together with his steeds and charioteer to the regions of Death. O mighty monarch, the son of Chitrāsena resisted your grandson Srutakarman, as the latter rushed at (Drona), being drawn by steeds resembling peacocks. Those two grandsons of yours, of prowess difficult of being checked, desirous of slaying each other,

27—29. Fought admirably with each other for bringing about the success of their respective sire's purposes. The son of Drona, seeing Prativindhya stand before him in that battle, checked him with arrows, in order to do honour to his sire. Wrought up with rage, Prativindhya with whetted shafts pierced him who bore the device of the lion's tail in his banner and who was anxious to serve his father's interests. O

foremost of men, like a sower sowing seeds in the sowing season,

30—35. The son of Droupadi, covered the son of Drona with an arrowy downpour. The son of Dussasana resisted the mighty car-warrior Srutakirti, the son of Arjuna by Droupadi, as the latter was rushing at Drona. But that son of Krishna equal to Krishna (in prowess), cutting off with three wellsharpened *Vallas*, the bow, banner, and charioteer of the former (the son of Dussasana), advanced towards Drona. Lakshmana checked that slayer of Pattachara who is regarded, O king, as the bravest among the two hosts. But the latter, O Bharata, appeared resplendent, having cut off Lakshmana's bow and banner-mark and showering myriad shafts on him. The youthful Vikarna, endued with great intelligence, opposed, in that battle, the youthful Sikhandin, the son of Yajnasena, as he advanced. Thereat the son of Yajnasena covered the former with a net-work of arrows.

36—39. Your son endued with prowess appeared beautiful by defeating that shower of arrows. Angada checked the heroic Uttamauijasa, with a down-pour of arrows, as the latter advanced in that battle against Drona. The awful encounter between those two foremost of men enhanced the delight of all the soldiers as also of them both. The mighty Bowman Durmukha endued with prowess, resisted with shafts called *Vatsadantas*, the heroic Purujit as the latter advanced towards Drona. But this latter struck Durmukha between his two eyebrows with a *Naracha*.

40—41. Thereupon the countenance of Durmukha appeared charming like a lotus with its stem. Karna checked with an arrowy shower the Kekaya brothers owning crimson standards, as they rushed towards Drona. Greatly afflicted, they also covered Karna with a down-pour of arrows.

42. Karna also covered them repeatedly with showers of arrows. Neither they nor Karna was to be seen being covered over with (clouds of) shafts.

43—46. Their steeds, drivers and standards and cars were all lost to sight being covered with thick arrowy showers. Your three sons, viz., Duryaja, Jaya, and Vijaya resisted, the three, viz., king Nila, the ruler of Kasis, and king Jayatsena. Then the fierce combat between them afforded delight to the lookers-on like that between a tiger, a lion, and a wolf on the one side and a bear, a buffalo and a bull on the other side. Kshemadhuri and Vrihanta, these two brothers together wounded with keen-pointed shafts, him of the Satwata race, as he advanced towards Drona in that

battle. Then the battle between those brothers and Satyaki became exceedingly wonderful.

47-48. Like that between a lion and a couple of leader-elephants with rent temples in the woods. Excited with wrath the ruler of the Chedis, kept away, by discharging shafts, from Drona, king Ambastha who always delighted in battle. Then Ambastha pierced him with a long shaft that penetrated into his very bones.

49-53. Loosing hold of his bow furnished with arrows, he fell down from his chariot. The generous son of Saradwata namely Kripa, with arrows called *Kshudrakas*, resisted Vardhakshehi of the Vrishni race, whose very appearance reflected wrath. Then those that saw Kripa and him of the Vrishni race—the heroes accomplished in various modes of warfare—engaged in battle with each other, became absorbed in that encounter, and they could attend to no other action. The son of Somadatta for adding to the glory of Drona, opposed the ever vigilant king Manimanta as the latter rushed towards Drona. The son of Somadatta then with great activity, cut off the latter's bow-string, banner, charioteer, umbrella and flag-staff and felled him from his car. Then the slayer of foes, Yupaetu (owning the device of a sacrificial stake on his standard) jumping down, with lightness, from the car,

54. Cut off with a best-tempered sword king Manimanta with his steeds, charioteer, standard and chariot. Thereafter remounting his own chariot, and grasping another bow,

55-58. And himself urging his steeds, he began to consume the host of the Pandavas. Vrishasena, a worthy combatant, checked with an arrowy shower, king Pandya who was rushing to battle like Indra rushing after the Asuras for slaying them. With maces, bludgeons, scimitars, axes stones, and other weapons, and with short clubs, mallets, discs, *Vindipalas*, battle-axes, and with dusts, wind, fire, water, ashes, gravels, straw, trees, afflicting, smiting, breaking, slaying, routing and throwing down, and terrifying the hostile troops, came Ghatotkacha, desirous of getting near Drona.

59. Excited with wrath, the Rakshasa Alumvusha began to strike that Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha) with various kinds of weapons and various implements of war.

60. The encounter that then took place between those two foremost of the Rakshasas, resembled that which took place between

Sumeru and the king of the immortals, in days gone by.

61. Good betide you. Thus amidst that dreadful general engagements, hundreds of single combats were fought between the car-warriors, elephant-warriors, horse-warriors and foot-soldiers of your army and theirs.

62. Indeed the battle that then raged between the warriors that were intent on destroying and protecting Drona, indeed such a battle was never seen or heard of before.

63. Many were the combats that were seen raging on that field; O lord, some of which were dreadful, some wonderful and some exceedingly terrible.

Thus ends the twenty-fifth chapter, the description of single combats, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXVI.

(SAMSAPATA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. When the Pandavas returned and when divisions clashed against divisions, how did the warriors of my army and those belonging to the sons of Pritha, endued with activity, fight?

2. What also did Arjuna do to the car-warriors of the *Samsaptaka* host, and what, O Sanjaya, did the *Samsaptakas* do to Arjuna in return?

Sanjaya said:—

3. When the Pandavas did return to the charge and when divisions clashed against divisions, your son (Duryodhana) himself at the head of the elephant division, rushed at Bhimsena.

4. Like an elephant challenged by another or like a bovine bull summoned by a rival, Bhimasena, challenged by the king himself, rushed against that elephant division.

5. And, O sire, that son of Pritha, accomplished in battle, and endued with strength of arms, soon shattered that host of elephants.

6. Those elephants, prodigious like mountains, and with ichor exuding from all parts of their bodies, were crushed and compelled to turn back by the *Nurachas* of Bhimasena.

7. Indeed as a raging tempest tears away a net-work of clouds, so did the son of the Wind (Bhima) shatter that host (of elephants).

8. Scattering arrows on that herd of elephants, Bhima appeared beautiful, like the sun scattering his shining rays on all objects of the world.

9. Afflicted with the shafts of Bhima and bespattered with blood, those elephants looked beautiful like various masses of clouds in the heavens streaked with the rays of the sun.

10. Thereupon Duryodhana excited with wrath, approached and pierced with whetted shafts the son of the Wind who was afflicting his (Duryodhana's) own division of elephants.

11. Thereat, with blood-red eyes, Bhima within a while, desirous of dragging the king to destruction, began to pierce the latter with winged shafts.

12. Then Duryodhana, covered with arrows on all parts of his body, and wrought up with rage, began to pierce the son of Pandu, viz., Bhimasena, with *Narachas* or the effulgence of the rays of the sun, laughing all the while.

13. Duryodhana had an (artificial) elephant embossed with gems and jewels as the device gracing his banner; this elephant together with the former's bow, the son of Pandu severed with two *Vallas* in all haste.

14. Beholding Duryodhana afflicted by Bhima, O sire, the sovereign of the Angas, riding on an elephant, came with a view to afflict Bhima.

15. Seeing that best of elephants make towards himself with a roar resembling the rumble of the clouds, Bhima struck it sore with a *Naracha* between its two frontal globes.

16. That *Naracha*, penetrating through the body of the elephant at last struck on the ground. Then that elephant fell like a mountain struck with the thunder-bolt.

17. The *Mlechha* king who could not extricate himself from the dropping elephant was also falling with it; with an admirable lightness of hand, Vrikodara cut off the head of that monarch.

18. At the fall of the heroic ruler of the Angas, his division fled in all directions. Horses, elephants and car-warriors, seized with panic, began to crush the foot-soldiers in their flight.

19. When that host had been thus broken and routed in all directions, the sovereign of the Pragiyotisas rushed at Bhima, riding on his elephant.

20. With its two forelegs and its trunk contracted and with its eyes rolling and inflamed with fury, that elephant seemed to consume the son of Pandu.

21. It then shattered to pieces the car of Vrikodara together with the steeds harnessed thereto. Thereat running on his legs Bhima hid himself underneath body of the elephant.

22. The son of Pandu did not really fly, for he was acquainted with the science called *Anjalikavedha*; getting underneath the elephant's body, he began to strike it with his bare arms repeatedly.

23. He began to afflict that elephant that was intent on slaying him; whereupon the elephant began to whirl round like a potter's wheel in rapid motion.

24. Possessed of the might of ten thousand elephants, the glorious Vrikodara, having struck the elephant, came out from underneath its body and stood before Supratika.

25. Holding down Bhima with its trunk, Supratika then struck him with its knees; and winding its trunk round the neck of Bhima, it really tried to kill him.

26. Whirling round Bhimasena freed himself from the twine of the elephant's trunk. Then once more Vrikodara got under the body of that elephant.

27. Then when he saw a rival elephant of his own army make towards the one (underneath which he was standing), Bhima issuing out from under the body of the elephant, ran away with speed.

28. Thereupon a loud cry of 'Alas, Bhima is slain by the elephant' was set up by all the troops, O sire.

29. Frightened by that elephant, the Pandava army suddenly fled, O king, there where Vrikodara was standing.

30. Thereupon, considering Vrikodara to be slain, king Yudhisthira assisted by the Panchalas, environed Bhagadatta on all sides.

31. That foremost of car-warriors Yudhisthira, having surrounded Bhagadatta with cars on all sides, covered the latter with keen-pointed shafts by hundreds and thousands.

32. Baffling those myriad shafts with his iron hook, the Mountain-king, (Bhagadatta) agitated with his elephant the host of the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

33. Then, O ruler of men, we did indeed behold a wonderful feat achieved in that battle by the old Bhagadatta, through the instrumentality of his elephant.

34. Then the sovereign of the Dasarnas advanced against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, mounted on a swift-coursing elephant, exuding the temporal juice and moving in a tortuous motion.

35. Then the encounter that ensued between those two elephants of prodigious appearance, resembled the fight, in the days of yore, between winged mountains covered with trees.

36. Thereafter the elephant of the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, turning and wheeling round, slew the elephant of the king of the Dasarnas, by ripping open its flanks.

37. King Bhagadatta also, with seven *Tomaras* of the effulgence of the sun's rays, slew his adversary riding on an elephant just when the latter was about to slip down from his seat.

38. Thereupon Yudhishthira lacerating king Bhagadatta (with many shafts), surrounded him on all sides with a numerous host of car-warriors.

39. Mounted on his elephant and surrounded on all sides by the car-warriors, he (Bhagadatta) appeared beautiful like fire illumining a mountain surrounded by forests.

40. Then mounted on his elephant, he remained inside that compact circle of fierce bow-men riding on chariots and pouring showers of arrows.

41. Thereafter the king of the Pragjyotisas, poking his prodigious elephant, urged it towards the chariot of Yuyudhana.

42. Thereat the mighty elephant twining with its trunk the car of Sini's grandson, threw it violently to a distance; but Yuyudhana escaped.

43. His charioteer jumping upon the car, urged the mighty steeds of the Shindhu breed yoked thereto, and stopped reaching the spot where Salyaki was standing.

44. Then that elephant, availing itself of that breach in the circle of cars, came speedily out of it and began to overthrow all the rulers of the earth.

45. Those foremost of men being frightened by that swift-coursing elephant, regarded that single one to be multiplied into hundred elephants, in that battle.

46. The Pandavas crushed by Bhagadatta mounted on his elephant, appeared like the Danavas crushed by Indra mounted on the Airavata.

47. When the Panchalas were flying on all sides, a deafening and dreadful din was created by their elephants and steeds.

48. Thus when the Pandavas were being afflicted by Bhagadatta in that battle, Bhima wrought up with wrath once more rushed against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas.

49. Then that elephant drenching with the water spouting from its trunk the horses of the advancing Bhima, frightened them, and they carried away Bhuma from the field.

50. Thereafter Ruchiparvan the son of Kirti speedily rushed at him, mounted on his chariot and pouring showers of arrows like Death himself.

51. Then that ruler of the mountain tracts possessed of shapely limbs, despatched, with a straight shaft, Ruchiparvan to the regions of the son of Vivasvan (Death).

52. On the fall of that hero (Ruchiparvan), the son of Subhadra, the sons of Droupadi, Chekitana, Dhristaketu, and Yuyutsu, began to afflict that elephant,

53. Desirous of slaying it; and uttering dreadful roars, they began to pour on it their arrows like showers of rain.

54. Then that elephant urged with heels, toes, and the hook, by its skilful rider, rushed (at them) with speed, with its trunk stretched and eyes and ears fixed.

55. Then trampling upon the steeds of Yuyutsu, the animal crushed his charioteer; and, O monarch, Yuyutsu fled, forsaking his car, in all haste.

56. Then the warriors of the Pandava host out of a desire for slaying that foremost of elephants, speedily drenched it with the shower of their arrows, uttering loud shouts all the while.

57. At this juncture, your son with speed rushed, against the car of Subhadra's son. King Bhagadatta riding on his elephant and discharging arrows at the foe,

58. Appeared resplendent like the sun scattering his rays on the earth. Then the son of Arjuna pierced him with twelve shafts and Yuyutsu with ten.

59. The sons of Droupadi and Dhristaketu also pierced him with ten shafts; with those arrows shot with great care struck on its body, the elephant appeared beautiful.

60. Like a mighty rain-cloud struck with the rays of the sun. Urged on by the skill and vigour of its rider, and smitten with the shafts of the enemy,

61. That elephant began to throw down right and left, the warriors of the hostile host. Like a cow-herd belabouring with his cudgel the herd in the forest,

62. Bhagadatta began to smite the hostile troops repeatedly. Like the cawing of the crows pounced upon by the hawks,

19. Covered with those shafts, neither the son of Kunti, namely Partha, nor Krishna the assuager of the grief of men, nor horses nor chariots, O monarch, could be seen.

20. Then when Janarddana was overwhelmed with a swoon, and was covered with drops of perspiration, the son of Pitha fell to slaughter them in large numbers with his *Brahma* weapon.

21. Hundreds of arms with arrows, bow-strings and bows in their grasps, being severed, and also, standards, horses, charioteers, and car-warriors, all fell down on the earth.

22. Elephants, resembling in stature huge hills covered with trees, or masses of rain clouds, and furnished with trappings, having their riders slain, fell down on the ground being struck with the arrows of Partha.

23. Greatly afflicted with the shafts of Partha, steeds with riders on their backs, fell down dead on the ground, with their caparisons and reins severed and their *Vandha* rent.

24. Severed by Kuntin with his broad-headed arrows, the arms of men, having swords, lances and rapiers for their nail, and grasping bludgeons, mallets, and battle-axes, fell down.

25. Heads, O sire, resembling the rising sun, or the lotus or the moon, being severed by the arrows of Arjuna, fell down on the earth.

26. When the enraged Bhishma had been thus slaying his foes, the forces seemed to be on fire, being struck with beautiful but deadly shafts of various appearances.

27. Then all beings honoured Dhananjaya, who had been agitating the forces like an elephant crushing the lotus-stalks, by saying 'Well done,' 'Well-done.'

28. Beholding that feat of the son of Pitha, which was equal to the one achieved by Vasava himself, Madhava, highly amazed thus spoke to the former, with his hands folded.

29. 'I think, O Partha, the feat you have to-day achieved in battle is difficult of being performed even by Indra, or Yama or Kuvera himself.'

30. I have seen you to-day slay simultaneously in battle, hundreds and thousands of mighty car-warriors of the *Samsaptaka* host.

31. Then completely slaying those *Samsaptakas* who stayed in battle, Partha said

to Krishna, 'Now hasten towards Bhagadatta.'

Thus ends the twenty-seventh chapter, the slaughter of the *Samsaptakas*, in the *Samsaptaka-badha* of the *Drona Parva*.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Upon Partha's desire for advancing against the division of Drona, Krishna urged his steeds covered with golden caparisons, fleet as the mind and white in hue.

2. Beholding that foremost of the Kurus make towards his brothers afflicted sore by Drona, king Susarman with his brothers followed him, desirous of battle.

3. The invincible Arjuna owning white steeds then thus addressed Krishna saying — 'O Achyuta, this Susarman assisted by his brothers challenges me (to fight).

4. O slayer of foes, on the other hand, the ranks of my troops are being shattered, (by Drona); to-day my mind is undecided in its purposes, which is caused by the *Samsaptakas*.

5. Shall I slay the *Samsaptakas* or shall I save my own army afflicted by the foe. Know this to be what I am thinking of; tell me what would be beneficial for me?

6. Thus spoken to, the descendant of the Dasakas (viz. Krishna), turned the car, and drove the son of Pandu to the spot whence the ruler of the Trigaitas was summoning Arjuna.

7. Thereat Arjuna piercing Susarman with seven swift-coursing arrows, cut down his standard, bow and chariot with a couple of razor-sharp arrows.

8. Then with six swift-flying arrows Partha speedily despatched to the mansion of Death the brother of the ruler of the Trigaitas, with his steeds and charioteers.

9. Thereat Susarman, aiming at Arjuna, hurled an iron dart resembling a snake and he threw a lance at the son of Vasudeva.

10. Having cut down the dart with three shafts and the lance also with another three, Arjuna compelled Susarman to turn back, depriving him of his senses by means of an arrow down-pour.

11. None among your host ventured to oppose him, O monarch, as he came looking

fiere and showering arrows like Vasava pouring rain.

12. Then Dhananjaya advanced slaying all the mighty car-warriors of the Kouravas, with his arrows, just as fire advances consuming heaps of straw and fuel &c.

13. Like the touch of fire, people were unable to bear the unbearable impetuosity of that intelligent son of Kunti.

14. The son of Pandu overwhelming with his arrowy showers the hostile host, made, O monarch, towards the rulers of the Pragyotis, like Suparana pouncing down (upon his prey).

15-16. Then the ever-victorious Arjuna held in his grasp the bow, that was prolific of benefit for the sinless Pandavas, and that was capable of enhancing the grief of the enemy in battle, for the destruction of the Kshatriyas, brought about, O king, by your son's recourse to the deceitful game at dice.

17. Then, O monarch, your troops being thus agitated by the son of Pritha, was broken like a frail bark grounded on a rock.

18. Thereupon, ten thousand bowmen, brave and inflamed with a fierce determination for battle, and disregarding of victory or defeat, turned upon (Arjuna).

19. With their hearts shorn of fear, those mighty warriors completely encompassed him. Thereat Partha capable of bearing all burdens how heavy soever, took up that burden in that battle.

20. Then Partha began to crush your forces just as an infuriate elephant of six years of age, with rent temples crushes and tears an assemblage of lotus plants.

21. When the troops were being thus crushed, Bhagadatta, the ruler of men, riding on the self-same elephant, rushed suddenly at Dhananjaya.

22. Thereupon Dhananjaya that foremost of men, received him. (Bhagadatta), opposing him with his car. Then a fierce encounter raged between that car and that elephant.

23. Riding on their car and elephant respectively which were equipped according to the rules of the military science, those two heroes Dhananjaya and Bhagadatta careered through the field of battle.

24. Then staying on his elephant that resembled a mass of clouds, the mighty Bhagadatta showered upon Dhananjaya a down-pour of arrows, like Indra showering rain.

25. Then the son of Vasava (Arjuna) endowed with prowess, cut off with his arrow,

showers, the arrows of Bhagadatta, before they could even reach him.

26. Then, O sire, the king of the Pragyotis, baffling that shower of arrows, pierced the mighty-armed son of Pritha, as also Krishna, with his arrows.

27. Thereafter covering Krishna and Partha with a thick net-work of arrows, Bhagadatta urged his elephant towards them in order to slay them.

28. Thereat beholding that infuriate elephant make towards themselves like Death himself, Janardana with swiftness moved his car in a manner as to leave the elephant on the left.

29. Thus Dhananjaya, though he got an opportunity of slaying that mighty elephant and its rider from the right side, yet did not avail himself of it, recollecting the laws of fair combat.

30. The elephant, O sire, trampling down upon other elephants, cars and steeds, sent them all to the regions of Death. Thereat Dhananjaya was inflamed with wrath.

Thus ends the twenty-eighth chapter, the fight of Bhagadatta, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXIX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)--

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Wrought up with rage, what did Arjuna the son of Pandu do to Bhagadatta? What did also the ruler of the Pragyotis do towards Pritha's son? Tell me all as it happened.

Sanjaya said:—

2. When Krishna and Arjuna were both thus engaged with the ruler of the Pragyotis, all creatures regarded them as placed within the teeth of Death.

3. Then, O mighty monarch, from the back of the elephant harle, the ruler of the Pragyotis poured incessant showers of arrows on the two Krishnas (Arjuna and Krishna) stationed on the same chariot.

4. Thereafter Bhagadatta, with iron shafts furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and discharged from a full-drawn bow, pierced the illustrious son of Devaki.

5. Those superbly ornamented arrows of the touch of fire, shot with force by Bhagadatta, entered the earth, having pierced through the son of Devaki.

6. The son of Pritha then cut off Bhagadatta's bow, and slew that warrior who was supporting the latter from his flanks; he then engaged with the Pragjyotisa king as if in sport.

7. Thereat Bhagadatta sped at Arjuna fourteen lances of great sharpness and of the solar effulgence; but Arjuna cut each of them into three pieces.

8. Thereafter Arjuna shattered into pieces the armour covering Bhagadatta's elephant, with a mighty shower of arrows, the armour then dropped down on the earth.

9. With its armour shattered, and mangled with numerous arrow-wounds, that elephant appeared like a prince of mountain shorn of its cloudy envelope, and with its breast drenched with showers of rain.

10. Thereupon the ruler of the Pragjyotisas hurled at Vasudeva's son a dart having a golden staff and an iron head; but Arjuna cut that dart in two.

11. Thereafter having severed with arrows the umbrella and the standard of the king, Arjuna quickly pierced the ruler of the mountain-provinces with ten shafts, smiling the while.

12-13. Then that ruler of the Pragjyotisas was sorely wounded by Arjuna's arrows furnished with beautiful wings formed of the feathers of the *Kanka* birds. Thereafter Bhagadatta, O ruler of men, waxing wroth, hurled lances at the head of Pandu's son owning white steeds. And then he uttered a loud war-cry. Then by those lances, the diadem of Arjuna was displaced.

14. Then putting his displaced diadem in its proper place, Phalguna said to king Bhagadatta:—"Take you a full view of this world."

15. Thus spoken to, king Bhagadatta, inflamed with rage, took up a lustrous bow and covered Pandu's son and Govinda with a shower of arrows.

16. The son of Pritha then having cut-off Bhagadatta's bow and quivers, quickly pierced the latter in all his vital limbs with two and seventy arrows.

17. Thus pierced and pained to the extreme, Bhagadatta invoked the *Vaishnava* weapon and inspiring its hook with sacred aphorisms, he let it go, in rage, at the breast of Pandu's son.

18. Thereupon Keshava, covering Pritha's son, relieved upon his own breast that weapon capable of slaying every being, hurled by Bhagadatta.

19. On the breast of Keshava that weapon became changed into a celestial garland.

Thereafter with a sorrowful heart Arjuna thus addressed Keshava:—

20. "O sinless one, without fighting for you, I will drive your steeds, in battle. Even these, O lotus-eyed one, were the words you spoke before. Why then do you not keep your promise inviolate?"

21. It is only then when I shall be involved in a calamity or shall be incapable of resisting (my foes and their weapons), it is then only that you shall take it upon yourself to protect me; but not when I am competent and standing thus.

22. Equipped with my bows and arrows, I am competent enough to conquer the worlds with all the celestials, Asuras, and mortals dwelling in them, this fact indeed you also know."

23. Thereupon the son of Vasudeva addressing Arjuna spoke these words in reply:—"Hear, O sinless one, O son of Pritha, this ancient and mysterious piece of history.

24. Ever occupied as I am in achieving the welfare of the worlds, I have four semblances. Dividing myself into parts I do try to bring about the world's benefit.

25. One of my semblances, remaining on earth, is even now practising ascetic austerities. Another keeps an eye over the world engaged in good and evil deeds.

26. My third semblance, staying in the world of men, is engaged in the performance of acts, and my fourth semblance sleeps a sleep extending over four thousand years.

27. This last-mentioned semblance of mine that awakes at the end of the every thousand years, accords excellent boons at that time, to those who really deserve them.

28. On one such occasion, the Earth knowing that the boon-giving hour has come, solicited a boon for her son Naraka; hear, I shall tell it to you.

29. "Possessed of the *Vaishnava* weapon let my son be unslayable, both by the gods and the demons. It behoves you to grant me that weapon."

30. Listening then to that prayer for the boon that the earth wanted me accord to her son, I gave the excellent and irresistible *Vaishnava* weapon to him.

31. I then said—"O Earth, let this weapon be infallible in protecting Naraka. None, I say, will be able to slay him.

32. Protected by this weapon, your son, the crusher of hostile hosts, will, in all times and everywhere, be invincible."

33. Then saying "Be it so", that intelligent goddess went away, satisfied at the fruition of her desire. Her son Naraka, that afflicter of hostile heroes, also accordingly became invincible.

34. Then, O son of Pritha, that weapon of mine was secured by the ruler of the Pragjyotisas from Naraka; and O sire, there is none unslayable by it in all the worlds, not excluding Indra and Rudra themselves.

35. For your sake therefore, O Arjuna, I did baffle the weapon. Now slay the mighty Asura deprived of his excellent weapon.

36. Now slay in battle your invincible opponent Bhagadatta, that enemy of the gods, like myself slaying, in days of yore, Naraka, for the worlds' benefit."

37. Thus spoken to by the high-souled Kesava, Pritha's son, suddenly covered Bhagadatta with a shower of sharp arrows.

38. Then the mighty-armed and high-souled Arjuna dauntlessly wounded Bhagadatta's elephant between its frontal globes with a (long) lance.

39. Then like the thunder-bolt rending a mountain open, that dart flying towards the elephant penetrated into its body to the very wings, like a snake entering into its hole in an ant-hill.

40. Then like the wife of a poor man, refusing to carry out the orders of her husband, that elephant though often urged by Bhagadatta, refused to obey his orders.

41. With its limbs paralysed it fell down striking the earth with its tusks. Then that huge elephant gave up its breath uttering a yell of distress.

42. Thereafter the son of Pandu pierced the heart of king Bhagadatta with a crescent-shaped arrow of straight knots.

43. His bosom being torn open by the diadem-decked Arjuna, king Bhagadatta lost the grasp of his bow and arrows, being deprived of vitality.

44. The precious cloth that had constituted his turban now fell off from his head like a petal falling off from a lotus when its stem is struck violently.

45. He himself decorated with a garland of gold fell down from the back of his mountain-like elephant, decked also with trappings of gold, like a blossoming *Kur-nikara* tree falling down from the crest of a hill, being uprooted by the violence of the wind.

46. Then in that battle, the son of Indra having slain that monarch equal to Indra in prowess and who was a friend of Indra,

began to crush, inspired with the hopes of victory, other warriors of your army, like a violent gust of wind crushing large number of trees.

Thus ends the twenty-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Bhagadatta, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Having slain the ruler of the Pragjyotisas who was the friend and favourite of Indra, and who was possessed of immeasurable prowess, the son of Pritha circumambulated him.

2. Thereafter, Vrisaka and Achala, the two sons of the king of the Gandharas, both competent to subjugate hostile cities, began to afflict the son of Pandu in battle.

3. Those two heroic bowmen assailing Arjuna simultaneously from the rear and the van, began to pierce him with swift-flying arrows coursing with vehemence.

4. Thereupon with whetted shafts, Pritha's son cut off into fragments the steeds, the charioteer, the bow, the standard, the umbrella and the chariot of Vrisaka the son of Suvala.

5. Thereafter Arjuna with showers of arrows and various other weapons, began to afflict the Gandharas headed by Suvala and others.

6. Then wrought up with wrath, Dhananjaya despatched, by means of his arrows, to the regions of Death, five hundred heroic Gandhara warriors with their weapons held over their heads.

7. Meanwhile the mighty-armed Vrisaka alighting from his chariot of which the horses were slain, ascended the car of his brother with agility, and grasped another bow.

8. Then those two heroic brothers Vrisaka and Achala, both riding on the self-same car, began incessantly to pierce Pritha's son with their arrowy downpour.

9. Then those two kings, your brothers-in-law, viz., Vrisaka and Achala of illustrious souls, began to wound Partha sorely, like Vala or Aritra wounding Indra himself.

10. The two Gandhara kings of unerring aims, again and again pierced Pandu's son like the summer and the rainy months of the year piercing the world with heat and rain respectively.

11. Thereat, O monarch, Arjuna with a single shaft slew those two foremost of men, those two princes, viz, Vrsaka and Achala who had been riding on the same chariot side by side.

12. Thereupon those two heroic brothers with red eyes, possessed of long arms, having similar features and looking like two lions, fell down from their car.

13. Then their bodies, so much tended by their friends and favourites, falling from the car, lay prostrate on the Earth, spreading sacred fame in all the ten points of the compass.

14. Thereafter, O ruler of men, your sons beholding their two unretreating and heroic maternal uncles slain, began unceasingly to discharge weapons.

15. Then, conversant with hundred kinds of illusion, Sakuni beholding his two brothers slain spread a mighty illusion for confounding the two Krishnas.

16. Then clubs, iron-balls, *Satoghnis*, rocks, darts, maces, bludgeons, swords, tridents, mallets, battle-axes,

17. *Kampanas* scimitars, nails, *Mushalas*, axes, razors, horse-shoe-headed arrows, *Nalikas*, *Vatsadantas* and shafts of bony-heads,

18. Discs, *Vishikhas*, lances, and many other kinds of weapons began to fall upon Arjuna from all the cardinal and subsidiary points of the compass.

19. Also asses, camels, buffalos, tigers, lions, deer, leopards, bears, wolves, vultures, monkeys, and various reptiles,

20. And diverse kinds of *Rakshasas*, and flights of birds, all burning with hunger and rage, assailed Arjuna from all sides.

21. Thereat that heroic son of Kunti, by name Dhananjaya, versed in the use of celestial weapons, discharging a net-work of arrows, simultaneously attacked them all.

22. Attacked by that hero with excellent and strong arrows, those beasts and reptiles and birds, emitting loud yells of agony, began to give the ghost up on the field of battle.

23. Thereupon Arjuna's chariot was enveloped in a pall of gloom and harsh voices were heard to reproach Arjuna from within that gloom.

24. Then in that fierce battle, Arjuna, with a mighty and lustrous weapon of the

finest make called *Gotishka*, dispelled that dreadful and palpable darkness capable of inspiring every one with terror.

25—26. When that gloom had been dispelled, frightful waves of waters started into existence. Thereupon for destroying these water-waves, Arjuna discharged the *Aditya* weapon, that weapon then dried up almost all the water-waves. Thus various kinds of illusions created by Suvala's son,

27. Arjuna smilingly nullified by means of the virtue of his weapons. When all his illusions had been nullified, struck with the arrows of Arjuna and seized with terror,

28. Sakuni fled like a mean deserter, being borne away by fleet coursers. Then Arjuna conversant with the use of all weapons, displaying to his foes his great light-handedness,

29. Poured showers of arrows on the host of the Kouravas. Then that army of your son, thus smashed by Pittha's son,

30. Became split up in twain, like a current of Ganges water dividing into two streams when it is obstructed by a hillock. Some among those foremost of men, then sought shelter from Drona,

31. And others, O king, being afflicted sore by the diadem-decked Arjuna, flew towards Duryodhana's division. Then we could not see Arjuna, as the army was enveloped in a cloud of dust.

32. I could then only hear the twang of the Gandiva-bow on my right side, as also the sound and blare of conch-shells, and drums, and the din of many other musical instruments.

33. But rising above all those noise and din, the twang of the Gandiva reached the very heavens. Then on the Southern part of the field, again raged a fight between numerous warriors on the one side,

34. And Arjuna on the other. I, however, followed Drona's division. Then the diverse divisions of Yudhishthira's army began to strike down the enemy's host on the field.

35. Then, O Bharata, like wind scattering masses of clouds in the heavens, Arjuna began to scatter the various divisions composing the army of your son.

36. None could then resist that fierce bowmen, that excellent of all male beings, as he advanced, like Indra, pouring incessantly showers of arrows.

37. Then all those troops of yours, thus slaughtered by Partha, and overwhelmed with intense pain, began to fly, and in flying crushed many of their own number.

38. The arrows, sped by Arjuna, furnished with wings of *Kanka* feather and capable of piercing into every body, began to fall even like flights of locusts covering all the ten points of the compass.

39. Those arrows, O sire, penetrating through horses, car-warriors, elephants and foot-soldiers, entered the earth, like snakes entering their holes in ant-hills.

40. Arjuna did not shoot more than one arrow at any elephant, man, or horse. Each of these, afflicted by one shaft only, began to fall down and give up the ghost on the field.

41. Over-strewn with slain men, and elephants, and horses mangled with arrows, and filled with the yells of dogs and jackals, the field of battle assumed an awful appearance.

42. Afflicted with arrows, then father deserted his son, friend forsook his friend, and son abandoned his father. Then with their hearts intent on saving themselves, men even forsook their very vehicles, being pained by the arrows of Partha.

Thus ends the thirtieth chapter, the retreat of Sakuni, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXI.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA).—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. What, O Sanjaya, was the state of your mind when my army was routed and crushed by Pandu's son and when you speedily fled away from the field?

2. The re-assembling of broken and routed troops is ever very difficult; tell me all about it, O Sanjaya.

Sanjaya said:—

3. In spite of all these, O ruler of men, many excellent heroes, desirous of doing good to your son and of keeping their reputation unsullied, followed Drona's track.

4. During that fierce encounter, they dauntlessly followed their commander, achieving numerous feats of valour, with weapons upraised and with Yudhisthira within accessible distance.

5. Availing themselves of an error of the heroic Bhimasena, of Satyaki of immeasurable prowess and of the mighty Dhristadyumna, the Kuru leaders fell upon the Pandava divisions.

6. The fierce Panchalas urged on their troops saying "There is Drona, there is Drona," whilst your sons urged on the Kurus, saying, 'Let not Drona be slain'.

7. Then one side saying "Fall upon Drona, fall upon Drona," and the other side saying, "Let not Drona be slain," a game of dice seemed to be played between the Kurus and the Pandavas, in which Drona was the stake.

8. Dhristadyumna, the Panchala prince, proceeded to those spots wheresoever Drona sought to assail the car divisions of the Panchalas.

9. Thus during that sanguinary engagement in which no rule for selection of antagonists was followed, heroes encountered heroes, uttering aloud their respective war-cries.

10. The Pandavas then became incapable of being shaken by their enemies, whilst they themselves, keeping alive the memory of all the wrongs they had to suffer, made the ranks of their foes tremble with fear before them.

11. Then in that fierce fight, the naturally modest Pandava warriors, under the influence of animosity and urged on by their energy, rushed to battle reckless of their lives and desirous of slaying Drona.

12. When those heroes of immeasurable energy played in that battle, as if in a game of dice, staking their very lives, there seemed to be a collision of iron against adamant.

13. Even the oldest men could not recollect, O monarch, of having seen or heard of such a battle before.

14. In that battle distinguished by the slaughter of heroes, the earth seemed to tremble, being oppressed with the burden of the living oceans that rushed against one another.

15. The fierce yells uttered by your troops, tossed and agitated as they had been, filling the very heavens, seemed to penetrate even to the heart of the army of the Ajatasatru Yudhisthira.

16. Meanwhile the Pandava hosts, having reached by thousands Drona who had been coursing through the field of battle became shattered and broken with the sharp shafts of the latter.

17. When those troops were thus being crushed by Drona of marvellous achievements, the generalissimo of the Pandava hosts himself encountered Drona.

18. Then we beheld the marvellous fight between Drona and the Panchala

prince, and my firm conviction is that that battle has no parallel.

19. Then like fire burning down houses, Nila resembling a veritable fire, of which the arrows were the scintillations, the bow the flames, began to consume the Kuru army.

20. Thereat seeing Nila consume the troops, the highly puissant son of Drona, who had long been desirous of fighting with the former, smilingly addressed these smooth words to him (Nila).

21. "What do you gain, O Nila, by consuming with your arrowy flame so many of my common soldiers? Fight with me single-handed as I am; and waxing wroth, do you strike me as you can."

22. Then Nila, possessed of a countenance beautiful like a full-blown lotus, began to pierce with his arrows him whose body resembled a cluster of lotuses and whose eyes resembled lotus-petals.

23. Thus pierced deeply by him, Drona's son, with ten whetted and broad-headed arrows, cut off the bow, the standard, and the umbrella of his adversary.

24. Then jumping down from his car, Nila, armed with an excellent sword and buckler, desired to sever from Aswathaman's trunk his head, like a bird (bearing away its prey in its clutches).

25. Thereat, O sinless one, Drona's son with a broad-headed shaft smilingly severed from Nila's trunk his head graced with a fine nose and decked with ear-rings, and resting on elevated shoulders.

26. Then Nila, whose countenance resembled in splendour the full moon, whose eyes were like petals of lotuses, whose stature was tall, whose complexion was like that of the lotus, thus slain, fell down on the earth.

27. After Nila of furious energy had been thus slain by the preceptor's son, the host of the Pandavas, was greatly agitated with grief.

28. Then, O sire, all the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host began to think, "How indeed, would the son of Vasava (Arjuna) be able to save us from our foes."

29. When that heroic and mighty warrior is engaged in the southern part of the field in crushing the enemies' troops, and in slaughtering the remnant of the Samsaptaka and the Narayana troops."

Thus ends the thirty-first chapter, the slaughter of Nila, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—

continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Vrikodara could not tolerate that slaughter of his own troops. He therefore, wounded Valhika with sixty, and Karna with ten shafts.

*2. Thereupon Drona, desirous of making his life out of him, pierced him in all his vital parts, with whetted shafts of exceeding sharpness, all coursing in straight lines.

3. Once more, desirous of giving Bhima no respite, Drona stuck twenty-six arrows, all resembling fire in touch and venomous serpents in fierceness, on the former. Then again Karna pierced him with twelve and Aswathaman with seven arrows;

4. King Duryodhana also covered him with six arrows. The highly puissant Bhimasena also pierced them in return;

*5. He pierced Drona with fifty shafts and Karna with ten arrows, and Duryodhana with twelve and Drona's son with eight swift-coursing arrows.

*6. Then uttering a loud war-cry, he engaged himself in battle. In that fight in which the warriors fought heedless of their lives and in which death seemed to be the common lot of all,

7. Ajatasatru (Yudhishthira) urged on his troops to the rescue of Bhima. Those troops then approached Bhimsena of infinite prowess.

8—9. Then, Yuyudhana and others, the twin sons of Madri by Pandu, and other car-warriors headed by Bhima, assembled and united together and wrought up with rage, all foremost of men, fell upon Drona's division protected by many foremost archers, desirous of breaking and shattering it.

10. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely Drona, received unflinchingly those highly puissant heroic car-warriors, all masters in the art of fighting.

11. Then your troops, disregarding their kingdoms and the fear of death, encountered those of the Pandavas. Horse soldiers slew horse-soldiers, and car-warriors slew car-warriors.

12. There were then veritable showers of lances and swords; and the battle was fought with battle-axes. Dreadful sword-fights producing great carnage were also fought.

13. The battle was all the more dreadful in consequence of the tremendous rush

40. Thereat Drona, excited to the highest pitch of fury, spread a great carnage among the ranks of the Chedis, the Panchalas, and the Pandavas, by means of arrows which he discharged by hundreds.

41. Then, O sire, the twang of his bow and the slap of his palms were heard in all the points of compass, resounding the rumble of thunder, and inspiring terror into the hearts of many a man.

42. At this juncture, the ever-victorious Arjuna, having vanquished the numerous host of the *Samsaptakas*, came to the spot where Drona had been crushing the Pandava ranks.

43. Then Phalguna showed himself in that part of the field, after having vanquished and slain the *Samsaptakas* and crossed many a lake whose waters were constituted by gore and whose mighty eddies were constituted by the numerous shafts.

44. Then we beheld the standard, bearing the emblem of the ape, of that one of illustrious renown and equal to the sun in effulgence, shine on that part of the field.

45. Having dried up the *Samsaptaka* ocean with his weapons that constituted his rays, that son of Pandu then looking like the sun during the Dissolution period at the end of a *Yuga*, began to scorch the Kourava ranks.

46. Like the comet risen at the end of a *Yuga* burning every creature, Arjuna then began to blast with the power of his weapons the Kuru hosts.

47. Pierced by him with thousands of shafts, elephant-riders, horse-soldiers and car-warriors, fell down on the earth, with hair dishevelled and bodies mangled with arrow-wounds.

48. Some uttered distressful cries, some emitted loud roars; others again struck by the shafts of Pritha's son, fell down deprived of life.

49. Remembering the duties of a warrior, Arjuna then desisted from slaying those among the hostile warriors who were falling or fallen or those who turned away from the field of battle.

50. The Kuru warriors then, deprived of their cars, and filled with wonder, and with their faces turned away from the field of battle, began to utter cries of "Oh!" and "Alas" and called upon Karna saying "O Karna, O Karna."

51. The son of Adhiratha then hearing those distressful cries of those who deserved his help, proceeded to face Arjuna,

saying at the same time, "Be not afraid, O warriors."

52. Then that foremost of the Bharata combatants, that delighter of all the Bharata heroes, *vis.*, Karna, that foremost of all conversant with the use of weapons, invoked into existence the *Agraya* weapon.

53. Dhananjaya however with the network of arrows woven by himself, repulsed the arrowy downpour of that hero (Karna) of bright shafts and effulgent bow.

54. Similarly the son of Adhiratha repulsed the arrows of Arjuna of blazing energy. Thereafter the former repulsing the weapons of the latter with his own weapons and discharging myriads of shafts, uttered loud roars.

55. Meanwhile Dhristadyumna, Bhima, and Satyaki, these mighty car-warriors, having approached Karna, pierced him each with three straight-flying arrows.

56. Thereupon Radha's son, having at first resisted Arjuna's weapons by his arrowy showers, cut off the bow of those three warriors with three darts.

57. Then with their bows severed, those warriors appeared like serpents without venom. Then from their respective cars, hurling lances at the foe, they uttered loud war-cries.

58. Then those mighty and blazing lances hurled with fury by the arms of those heroes, coursed swiftly towards Adhiratha's son, looking like so many (flying) snakes.

59. Severing each of those lances with three swift-coursing arrows and speeding at the same time myriads of shafts at Arjuna the highly puissant Karna uttered a loud roar.

60. Then Arjuna also piercing Radha's son with seven swift-flying arrows, slew the younger brothers of Karna with three shafts of great sharpness.

61. Thereafter Pritha's son having slain Satrunjaya also with six straight-going arrows, speedily deprived Vitapa of his head with lances, as the latter stood on his chariot.

62. Thus those three uterine brothers of Suta's son were slain by the single-handed diadem-decked Arjuna even before the very eyes of all the Dhartarastras.

63. Then like a second son of Vinata, Bhima jumping down from his chariot, slew with his sword of excellent make five and ten warriors of Karna's party.

64. Then once more ascending his car and taking up a bow he pierced Karna

with ten and his horses and charioteer with five shafts.

65. Dhristadyumna also grasping an excellent sword and an effulgent buckler, slew Chandravarman and Vrihatskhatra the ruler of the Nishadhas.

66. Thereafter mounting on his chariot and taking up a bow, the prince of the Panchalas pierced Karna with seventy-three shafts uttering loud shouts all the while.

67. The grandson of Sini, of splendour equal to that of Indra himself, also grasping a fresh bow pierced the son of Suta with sixty-four arrows and uttered a roar like that of a lion.

68. Then with two well-directed broad-headed shafts he burst open Karna's bow; and once more he pierced Karna on the arms and breast with three shafts.

69. Thereupon king Duryodhana, Drona, and Jayadratha, with a combined effort, rescued Radha's son who had been sinking in the ocean of Satyaki.

70. Then hundreds of foot-soldiers, horse-men, elephant-riders and car-warriors, all accomplished in smiting, rushed to the rescue of Karna, inspiring terror into the hearts of the enemy.

71. Dhristadyumna, Bhima, Subhadra's son and Arjuna and Nakula and Sahadeva, all then protected Satyaki in that conflict.

72. Thus for the destruction of all the bowmen, raged the awful battle between your warriors and those of the enemy, in which everybody fought reckless of his life.

73. Foot-soldiers, car-warriors, elephant-riders and horse-men were engaged with elephant-riders, horse-men, car-warriors and foot-soldiers; car-warriors fought with elephants, infantry and cavalry; and cars and and infantry were engaged with cars and elephants.

74. Horses were seen engaged with horses, elephants with elephants, car-warriors with car-warriors and foot-soldiers with foot-soldiers.

75. Thus raged between those high-souled and fearless warriors, the fierce fight marked by carnage, enhancing the delight of the flesh-eating animals and adding to the population of Death's domain.

76. In that battle many were the car-warriors, elephant-riders and foot-soldiers and horse-men that were slain. Elephants were crushed by their rivals. Car-warriors with weapons held over head, were slain by car-warriors and horse-men by horse-men and large bodies of infantry by infantry.

77. Elephants were slain by car-warriors, steeds were crushed by excellent elephants; men were killed by horses; and horses again by excellent car-warriors. With their eyes, tongues, and teeth protruding out, and with their armours and ornaments shattered, many a creature lay on the earth deprived of the vital spark.

78. Others, again, of dreadful aspect, being slain by others armed with various and excellent weapons, fell down on the earth; they then were pressed inside the earth being trod upon by elephants and steeds, and being crushed and mangled by sharp edges of car-wheels.

79. When that dreadful destruction of beings went on enhancing the joys of beasts and birds of prey and cannibals, mighty heroes, inflamed with wrath, coursed over the field of battle smiting one another with impetuosity.

80. When the ranks of both the armies were greatly thinned, the combatants, with bodies bespattered with blood, looked at one another. At that moment, O Bharata, the orb of the day disappearing below the horizon, the two armies slowly returned to their respective encampments.

Thus ends the thirty-second chapter, the terrible carnage, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA.)

Sanjaya said:—

1. Ourselves being at first broken and routed by Arjuna of immeasurable prowess, and also the vow of Drona being unfulfilled in consequence of Yudhisthira being well guarded,

2. All your warriors, with their armours shattered, were then regarded as vanquished. Soiled with dust and sorely pierced with anxiety, they began to look askance at all the ten quarters of heaven.

3. Withdrawing from the field with the consent of Bharadwaja's son, after being vanquished by their adversaries of unerring aim, and humiliated by them in the conflict,

4. They heard, as they retired, the infinite virtues of Phalguna extolled by all beings, as also of the friendship of Keshava for Arjuna spoken of by all.

5—6. Then they passed the night like doomed men, in silence and in anxious contemplation. At the break of day, king

Duryodhana depressed at the aggrandisement of the enemy, inflamed with rage, addressed these words, before all those warriors to Drona, out of affection and affectionate anger, "O you learned in the art of speaking,

7. Indubitably, O foremost of the twice-born ones, you have taken us to be men doomed to be slaughtered for your sake, in as much as, to-day getting Yudhis-thira near you, you did not seize him.

8. The enemy whom you would seize in battle could not escape you if once you get him within sight, even if he be protected by the immortals themselves.

9. Pleased with me, you accorded me, a boon, but now you seem unwilling to verify your words. Noble men do never falsify the hopes of those who are devoted to them."

10. Thus spoken to, Bharadwaja's son felt greatly ashamed, then he thus addressed the king in reply — "It behoves you not to entertain such an uncharitable opinion regarding myself, who am ever striving to bring about your good.

11. All this universe, with all the celestials, Asuras, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the repules and the Rakshasas, is not competent enough to conquer that army (of the Pandavas) when it is protected by the diadem-decked Arjuna.

12. Except that of the three-eyed Mahadeva, whose might can avail anything against that army which number among it Govinda the world's creator, and have Arjuna for its generalissimo?

13. But this, O sire, I tell you truly, and this will never be false, that to-day I shall slay a mighty hero, the foremost among the many car-warriors of the enemy.

14. I will also form an array that will be invulnerable even to the celestials themselves. Do you, by some means or other, take Arjuna away from the field.

15. There is nothing unknown to him, nothing incapable of being achieved by him in battle,—he who have acquired all knowledge of warfare from different quarters."

16. After Drona had spoken in the above manner, the host of the *Sansaptakas*, once more challenging Arjuna led him to the Southern part of the field.

17. Then there took place a battle between Arjuna and his opponents, the like of which had never been seen or heard of before.

18. Then the array formed by Drona shone resplendent, O king, and it appeared incapable of being looked at, like the mid-

day sun shining in the meridian and scorching the world underneath.

19. Then, O Bharata, at the command of his father's eldest brother, Abhimanyu penetrated, in that battle, into that impenetrable array (of the Kurus) figuring the discus.

20. Having achieved many difficult feats and having slain thousands of warriors, Subhadra's son encountered six warriors simultaneously. At last succumbing to Dusasana's son,

21. O ruler of earth, O afflicter of your foes, he gave his life up in battle. At the death of Abhimanyu we were enraptured and the Pandavas were depressed with grief. After Subhadra's son had been slain, the troops were withdrawn by us.

Dhritarastra said :—

22. Hearing of the death of the youthful son of that foremost of men (Arjuna), my heart, O Sanjaya, seems to be split up into pieces.

23. Heartless, indeed, are the duties of the Kshatriyas as specified by the law-givers, in as much as these duties even enjoin a hero, desirous of sovereignty, to shoot weapons at a mere child.

24. Describe unto me, O Garga's son, how did so many warriors accomplished in the use of weapons, slay that wretched child, brought up in luxury, and careering (then) dauntlessly in the field?

25. Tell me, O Sanjaya, how in battle did the dauntless son of Subhadra, endued with immeasurable might sport, having penetrated into our car-division.

Sanjaya said :—

26. That which you ask me to describe, O foremost of kings, viz, the slaughter of Subhadra's son, I shall describe in detail, Hear, O king, attentively.

27. I shall tell you, how that hero played amidst us, having penetrated into our ranks, as also how, many irresistible heroes inspired with hopes of victory were afflicted by him.

28. Like the denizens of a wood abounding in numerous copses, creepers and trees, when encompassed by a terrible forest-conflagration, the combatants of your host were then all seized with panic.

Thus ends the thirty-third chapter, the consultation for forming the circular array, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIV

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

*Continued.***Sanjaya said :—**

1. The five Pandava brothers, all of fierce deeds in battle, and all incapable of being overcome by fatigue as is apparent from their achievements, when aided by Krishna, could not be vanquished even by the celestials.

2. In righteousness, in deeds, in lineage, in intelligence, in renown, in fame and in prosperity—in all these virtues, there neither was nor is, nor will be, a person equal to Yudhisthira.

3. King Yudhisthira is constantly in the enjoyment of heavenly bliss, in consequence of his devotion to truth, righteousness, control of passions, worship of the Vipras and such other qualities.

4. The Destroyer at the end of a Yuga, the highly puissant son of Jamadagni, and Bhimasena on his car, O King, these three are held to be equal (in prowess).

5. Of the wielder of Gandiva ever competent to fulfil his vows in battle, of that son of Pritha, I do see no equal on the face of the earth.

6. Devotion to the elders, secrecy of counsels, modesty, self-control, beauty of person and heroism, these six virtues are ever present in Nakula.

7. In knowledge of the *Srutis*, in gravity, in humility, in righteousness, in personal beauty and in prowess, the heroic Sahadeva equals the two immortals *vis*, the twin Aswinis.

8. All those illustrious qualities that are present mostly in Krishna and in the Pandavas, all those qualities were to be seen combined in Abhimanyu.

9. Abhimanyu was equal to Yudhisthira in patience, to Krishna in conduct, to Bhima of terrible deeds in his achievements.

10. He was equal to Dhananjaya in beauty of person, prowess, and scriptural knowledge; and to Nakula and Sahadeva in humility.

Dhritarastra said :—

11. O Suta, I desire to hear in detail how the invincible son of Subhadra, *vis*, Abhimanyu was slain in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

12. Be patient, O mighty monarch. Bear your unbearable burden of grief. I

shall speak of the dreadful carnage of your relations. Now hear me attentively.

13. The circular array, O monarch, was then formed by the preceptor, in which were duly stationed kings, each equal to Indra himself.

14. At the head of the array (entrance) were stationed all the princes of the effulgence of the sun. Then there was a veritable assembly of princes.

15. All of them swore to help one another, all owned standards decked with gold; all wore red raiments and all were decorated with crimson ornaments.

16. All of them possessed crimson flags; all had golden garlands; all were smeared with sandal-paste and other perfumed unguents, and all of them wore floral garlands and fine attires.

17. In a serried file, they rushed against Krishna's nephew, desirous of fighting with him. All of them, firm bowmen, then numbered no less than ten thousand strong in all.

18. Placing at their head your handsome grandson Lakshmana, they proceeded to battle, resolved to share one another's grief, emulating one another in deeds of valor,

19. Striving to outvie one another and intent on one another's good. O foremost of kings, Duryodhana was stationed in the very centre of your troops.

20. The king then was surrounded by such mighty warriors as Karna, Dussasana, and Kripa. With a white umbrella held over his head, he appeared beautiful like the king of the celestials.

21. Fanned by the moving yak-tails, he appeared like the sun himself. In the very van of those troops was stationed Drona the generalissimo of the Kuru hosts.

22. There also was stationed the handsome ruler of the Sindhus, immovable like the mount Meru itself. By the side of the ruler of the Sindhus, headed by Aswathaman,

23. stood, O mighty monarch, your thirty sons, all resembling the celestials themselves. That gamester, the ruler of the Gandharas, Salya and Bhurisravas,

24. These mighty car-warriors shone in the flank of the king of the Sindhus. Then raged a combat between your troops and those of the enemy,—combat, that was fierce in the extreme and horripilating and in which the warriors regarded Death to be their goal.

Thus ends the thirty-fourth chapter, the construction of the circular array, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. The Parthas then led by Bhimasena marched against that invincible array of your soldiers protected by the son of Bharadwaja.

2. Then Satyaki, Chekitana, Prishata's son Dhristadyumna, the powerful Kuntivoja, the mighty car-warrior Drupada,

3. The son of Arjuna, Kshatradharman, the puissant Vrihat-kshattria, the ruler of the Chedis, Dhristaketu, the two sons of Madri, Gotakacha,

4. Yudhamanyu of great prowess, the unvanquished Sikhandin, the impassible Uttamjonas, the mighty car-warrior Virata,

5. The wrathful sons of Droupadi, the valiant son of Sisupala, the highly powerful Kekayas, and the Srinjayas by thousands,

6. These and many others followed by their respective clansmen, all accomplished in the use of weapons, and invincible in battle, rushed with impetuosity at the son of Bharadwaja, out of a desire for battling with him.

7. The highly puissant son of Bharadwaja getting the warriors within reach dauntlessly checked them with a mighty downpour of arrows.

8. Like a mighty wave of waters checked by an immovable hill or like the swelling ocean checked by the banks, those warriors of the Pandava army were dashed back by Drona.

9. Afflicted, O king, with the shafts shot from Drona's bow, the Pandavas could not stand in front of Bharadwaja's son.

10. Then we beheld the wonderful strength of Drona's arms, in as much as, the Panchalas aided by the Srinjayas was not able to assail him.

11. Beholding then the infuriate Drona rush towards himself, king Yudhishthira reflected upon the diverse measures for resisting the former.

12. At last regarding Drona to be incapable of being checked by any one else,

Yudhishthira placed that unbearable and heavy burden on the son of Subhadra.

13. Then addressing that slayer of hostile heroes, namely, Abhimanyu, who was in no way inferior to the son of Vasudeva and was superior to Arjuna himself in infiniteness of prowess, king Yudhishthira said these words :—

14. "O son, do you so act, that coming back, Arjuna may not have reason to reproach us. The means for breaking the circular array, is not known to any one of us.

15. O mighty-armed one, either you or Arjuna, or Krishna, or Pradyumna, can penetrate into the circular array. I do not find a fifth man to do it.

16. It behoves you, so, O son, O Abhimanyu, to accord the boon that your sires, your uncles, and all these soldiers beg of you.

17. Quickly taking up your arms, smite down this array of Drona so that returning from the fight with the *Sampaptakas* Dhananaya may not blame us."

Abhimanyu said :—

18. Desiring victory to my sires, I will, without delay, penetrate into the middle of Drona's firm and fierce and excellent array of troops in this battle.

19. My father has taught me the way to penetrate this kind of array. But I do not know how to come out of the array, if per chance some danger overtake me there.

Yudhishthira said :—

20. Pierce, O foremost of warriors, this array, and create an opening for us to penetrate into it. Pursuing the very track you shall create, we will follow you.

21. Seeing you penetrate the hostile ranks, we will follow you, O sire, who are equal to Dhananjaya himself in battle, protecting you from all sides.

Bhima said :—

22. I will follow you, so also will Dhristadyumna and Satyaki and the Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, and the Prabhadras.

23. When the array will once be penetrated into by you, we will again and again destroy it, slaying foremost of the enemies' warriors.

Abhimanyu said :—

24. I will break through this invincible array of Drona, like an insect under the influence of anger entering into the flames.

25. I will this day achieve that feat that will redound to the good of both the families (of my father and mother). I will do what will please my sire and my maternal uncle.

26. All creatures will see the enemies' host crushed in large bodies by myself, an unaided child.

27. I will not consider myself to be begotten by Partha, or born of Subhadra, if to-day, encountering me, anybody escapes with his life.

28. If to-day, on a single car I cannot cut the whole race of the Kshatriyas into eight pieces in battle, I will not regard myself as the begotten son of Arjuna.

Yudhisthira said:—

29. May your might, O son of Subhadra, increase even as you speak, inasmuch as you venture to break through this impenetrable array of Drona,

30. Being protected by these foremost of men, all fierce bowmen possessed of great strength, all resembling the *Sadhyas*, or the *Rudras* or the *Marutas*, all who equal the *Vasus*, the fires, and the *Adityas* in prowess.

Sanjaya said:—

31. Hearing those words of Yudhisthira, Abhimanyu commanded his charioteer saying—"Quickly urge, O Sumitra, the steeds towards Drona's divisions."

Thus ends the thirty-fifth chapter, the determination of Abhimanyu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. The son of Subhadra, having heard the words of the intelligent king Yudhisthira commanded his charioteer to drive his chariot against the army of Drona.

2. Thus commanded by him with the words—*Proceed, Proceed*—the charioteer, O king, then replied to Abhimanyu saying:—

3. "Heavy is the burden, O long-lived one, that has to-day been placed on you by the Pandavas. Ascertaining by your judgment as to whether you have the strength to bear it or not, you should engage in the fight.

4. The preceptor Drona, by continued labours, has acquired the excellent weapons,

and he is an adept in the art of warfare. You, on the other hand, have been brought up in all luxury and are unaccustomed to the toils and severities of fight."

5. Thereupon Abhimanyu, with a smile, replied to his charioteer saying:—"O charioteer, who is indeed this Drona? What avails all this vast host of the Kshatriyas?"

6. I would engage even with Indra on the back of his elephant Airavata, and attended by the complete host of the immortals. I do not care anything for all this Kshatriyas to-day.

7. This host of the enemy is not competent to fight even with the sixteenth part of myself. Getting, O son of a driver, my uncle, the world-conquering Vishnu,

8. Or my father, for my antagonist in battle, I will not this day be overcome with terror." Thereafter Abhimanyu setting at naught those words of his charioteer,

9—10. Commanded him saying—"Quickly drive towards the division of 'Drona.' Then the charioteer with a heart scarcely cheery, urged on his steeds three years of age and decked with caparisons of gold. Then urged on towards the army of Drona by Sumitra, those steeds,

11. Endued with great fleetness and prowess, rushed, O king, against Drona himself. Beholding Abhimanyu thus advance, all the warriors, headed by Drona, of the Kourava host, advanced to meet him who was on the other hand followed by the Pandavas.

12. Then like a young lion falling upon a herd of elephants, the son of Arjuna equal to Arjuna in prowess, owning an excellent standard-bearing the device of a *Karanakara* tree, clad in fine coats of mail, fearlessly rushed against Drona, out of a desire for battle.

13. Filled with delight, the warriors of Drona's division began to strike Abhimanyu as he strove to break through their ranks. Then for a moment only there reigned a confusion, that resembled the eddy that is produced there where the Ganges stream flows into the waters of the ocean.

14. Then as the heroes fought on and slew one another, O king, there commenced a pell-mell and awful fight.

15. When that awful conflict raged fiercely, the son of Arjuna breaking through the enemies' array entered it even before the very eyes of Drona himself.

16. Then large bodies of elephant-riders, horse-men, car-warriors and foot-soldiers, all delighted, surrounded that mighty hero who

penetrating into the enemies' ranks, had already began to smite them down.

17. With the sound of various musical instruments, with shouts and slappings of arm-pits and war-cries, with yells, leonine roars, with cries of *Slay, Slay*,

18. With a dreadful and confused din, with exclamation of *Do not go, Stop, Come to me*, with repeated voices saying, *Hers am I, Come &c*,

19. With roars of elephants, with the tinkling of ornaments, with roars of laughter, with the clatter of car-wheels and horse-hoofs,—filling the earth with all these sounds, the Kourava warriors assailed the son of Arjuna.

20. That hero endowed with great lightness in discharging weapons, and possessed of the knowledge of the vital parts of the body, swiftly and firmly shooting arrows capable of penetrating into the very vitals, began to slaughter those advancing warriors of the enemy.

21. Though thus slaughtered by diverse shafts of exceeding sharpness, and rendered quite helpless, yet they, in that battle, fell upon Abhimanyu like flights of insects falling upon fire.

22. Then with their bodies and their severed limbs, Abhimanyu covered the earth like a priest covering the altar with Kusa-grass during a sacrifice.

23—26. Then Arjuna's son quickly lopped off by thousands the arms of your warriors, some of these arms were protected with gloves made of iguana skin, some held bows and shafts, some grasped swords, or bucklers or iron hooks and reins, some held lances and axes, some clutched maces or iron ball or spears. Some had in their grasps scimitars or crows or battle-axes, some held short darts, or shafts or *Kampanas*, some held goads and huge conch-shells, some wielded piked lances and *Kachgrahas*, some had mallets or other kinds of missiles, some had nooses, some heavy clubs, and brick-bats. All of these arms again were ornamented with bracelets and bangles and smeared with fragrant perfumes and unguents.

27. Then covered with those effulgent arms all bathed in the crimson fluid, the field, O sire O mighty monarch, appeared as if strewn over with five-headed serpents torn to pieces by Garuda.

28—30. Then Bhishma's son spread the earth with the severed heads of the enemy—heads graced with beautiful noses and countenances and tresses of hair, and without blotches, and adorned with ear-rings; heads from which blood flowed copiously and in

which the nether lips were bit in anger; heads that appeared like lotuses severed from their stems owing to their being decked with beautiful garlands, and tiaras, and turbans, and pearls and gems, and owing to their being possessed of the splendour of the sun or the moon; heads that laved with fragrant perfumes could speak sweet and salutary words, when the vital spark was in them.

31—33. Then, O Bharata, Arjuna's son careered in all directions over the field, having shattered with his arrows, cars, equip with all the necessities of war, and looking like the vapoury edifices in the air, having shafts in front and excellent bamboo poles, and looking beautiful with standards mounted on them. They were all deprived of their *Fanghas*, axels, periferries, and *Daschas*, wheels, standards, and terraces, the implements of war in them were all splintered into pieces, the precious clothes that covered them were all blown away and warriors on those cars, were slain by thousands.

34—35. Then again with arrows of keen points and edges he cut down the enemy's elephants, with their riders, standards, hooks, banners, quivers, armours, girths, neck-ropes, caparisons, blankets, bells, trunks, and also the foot-soldiers that guarded those elephants from the back.

36—39. Numerous steeds of the Vanayu the Lilly, the Kainvoja, and the Valhika breed with tails, ears, and eyes fixed and motionless, endowed with great fleetness, well-broken, ridden by accomplished warriors armed with swords and spears were seen to be deprived of the fine ornaments of their heads as also of their fine tails, they were deeply pierced, and lay covering the field. Their tongues and their eyes were fixed, and their livers and entrails were drawn out, their riders had been slain; their bells torn, and they enhanced the delight of flesh-eating animals. Their armours and other leather fences were cut open and they lay weltering in the urine and excreta they themselves had discharged. Thus slaughtering your steeds and elephants, Abhimanyu appeared highly beautiful.

40. Achieving, single-handed, these most difficult of feats, like the incomprehensible Vishnu in the days of old, Abhimanyu crushed your army consisting of three kinds of forces,

41. Even like the three-eyed Deity of infinite prowess crushing the Asura host. In that battle, the son of Arjuna having achieved feats incapable of being achieved by the enemy,

42-43. Began to break through your infantry divisions on all sides. Thus then beholding the army mangled with sharp arrows of the single-handed son of Subhadra like the army of the Asuras mangled by Skanda, your sons looked vacantly at all the ten points of the compass.

44. Their mouths became parched up; their eyes rolled; their persons were covered with drops of perspiration. Desponding to conquer their antagonist, they exerted themselves in flying away from the field.

45. Desirous of saving their lives, they called out one another by their appellation and family-names. Forsaking on the field their wounded fathers, sons, brothers, friends and relations, they strove to fly away from the field urging the horses and elephants that carried them to the top of their speed.

Thus end the thirty-sixth chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)-

Continued.

Sanjaya said :-

1. Then beholding his army routed by Subhadra's son of immeasurable energy, king Duryodhana worked up to the highest pitch of fury, himself proceeded against the former.

2. Then seeing the king turn back upon Subhadra's son in battle, Drona addressed the warriors saying "Save the king.

3. The highly puissant Abhimanyu is slaying even before our very eyes, every one he is aiming at. Assail him, and be not afraid, and rescue the king of the Kurus."

4. Thereupon grateful, mighty and friendly warriors, ever attended with victory though inspired with fears, yet surrounded your heroic son in order to rescue him.

5. Drona and Drona's son, Kripa, Karana, Kritavarman, and Suvala's son, Vrihadvala, the ruler of the Madras, Bhuri, Bhurisravas, and Sala,

6. Pourava and Vrishasena, all shooting sharp arrows, covered Subhadra's son with thick downpour of arrows.

7. Then thus confounding the latter, they rescued Duryodhana. - But Arjuna's son did not tolerate this snatching away of the monarch from his very mouth.

8. Compelling those mighty car-warriors with their horses and charioteer to turn their faces away from the field of battle, by means of his arrowy downpour, the son of Subhadra sent up a loud war-cry.

9. Hearing that war-cry of his, resembling the roar of a lion desirous of prey, the warriors of your army headed by Drona and inflamed with rage, did not brook it.

10. Completely surrounding Abhimanyu with their host of cars, your warriors O sire, began to shoot at him myriads of arrows of diverse description all falling in thick showers.

11. But your grandson, with his own sharp arrows severed all these shafts even when the latter were coursing through the sky, in return also he pierced your warriors; indeed that feat then appeared wonderful.

12. Thereupon your warriors, excited with wrath in consequence of being wounded with shafts of the touch of fire and desirous of slaying the unretreating son of Subhadra, surrounded him on all sides.

13. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, with his arrows that served the purpose of banks, Arjuna's son held in check the agitated ocean that was then identified with the vast number of your troops.

14. None among those heroes, viz., Abhimanyu on one side and all your warriors on the other, who were then fighting with and slaying one another, turned away from the field of battle.

15. Thus when that awful and terrible combat raged fiercely, Dussaha pierced Abhimanyu with nine arrows.

16. Dussasana pierced him with twelve, Kripa the son of Saradwata with three, Drona with seventeen arrows, all resembling so many snakes of virulent poison.

17. Vivinsati pierced him with seventy, Kritavarman with seven, Vrihadvala with eight and Ashwathama with seven arrows.

18. Bhurisravas wounded him with three arrows, and the king of the Madras with six swift-coursing shafts. Sakuni pierced him with a couple of shafts and king Duryodhana with three.

19. Abhimanyu, on the other hand, O mighty monarch, pierced each of them with three straight-flying arrows, displaying his prowess and appearing to dance all the while with his bow in hand.

20. Then Abhimanyu, enraged in consequence of your sons seeking to terrify him

displayed his marvellous might that he had acquired through his culture and practices.

21. Then borne by his well-trained steeds possessed of the fleetness of Garuda or of the wind, and perfectly obedient to the wishes of him who held their reins, Abhimanyu quickly repulsed the heir of Asmaka

22. Standing before him, the prosperous and mighty son of Asmaka, pierced him with ten arrows, saying all the while, *stay stay*.

23. Then with ten arrows Abhimanyu smilingly cut down to the earth, his chariot-eer, horses, standards, arms, bow, and head.

24. When the heroic ruler of the Asmakas had thus been slain by the son of Subhadra, the whole of his army being completely agitated, took to flight.

25. Thereupon Karna, Kripa, Drona, Drona's son, the ruler of the Gandharas, Cala, Salya Bhurisravas, Kratha, Somadatta, Vivingsati,

26. Vrishasena, Susena, Kihundadin, Prataradonna, Vrindara, Lalitha, Pravahu, Dirghalochana,

27. And king Duryodhana, all excited with rage, covered him with a shower of arrows. Thus deeply pierced with straight-flying arrows by those mighty bowmen, Abhimanyu

28. Sped at Karna an arrow capable of penetrating through his armour and body. That swift-flying dart piercing through Karna's armour and body,

29. Entered, O king, the earth, like a snake entering its hole in an ant-hill. Pained to the extreme in consequence of that deep wound, and over-whelmed with a swoon,

30-31. Karna trembled in battle like a hill during an earth-quake. Then with other sharp arrows the valiant Abhimanyu inflamed with rage, slew Sushena, Dirghalochana, and Kundavedhina. Thereafter Karna pierced him in return, with twenty-five long shafts.

32. Aswathaman pierced him with twenty, and Kritavarman with seven arrows. Then that enraged grandson of Sakra, with his body stuck all over with arrows,

33. Looked, as he careered through the forces, like the Destroyer himself with noose in hand. Then he covered Salya who was standing near him with a thick shower of arrows;

34. And then that mighty-armed hero sent up a loud war-cry, that inspired terror into your troops. Pierced with straight arrows capable of penetrating to the vitals shot by Abhimanyu accomplished in all weapons,

35. Salya squatted down on the terrace of his car, O king, and fainted away. Beholding him thus deeply pierced by the illustrious son of Subhadra,

36. All the troops began to fly away, even before the very eyes of the son of Bharadwaja. Beholding that mighty-armed hero Salya, covered with gold-winged shafts, your troops fled like herds of deer frightened by the lion.

37. Then Abhimanyu, extolled by the ancestral manes, the celestials, and Charanas and Siddhas, and also by various kinds of beings inhabiting the earth, with eulogies about his heroism and bravery in battle, appeared blazing like fire fed with clarified butter.

Thus ends the thirty-seventh chapter the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)--

Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. What warriors of my army then tried to resist the son of Arjuna in battle when he was thus crushing my troops with his straight-flying arrows?

Sanjaya said :—

2. Hear, O king, of the wonderful achievements of the prince (Abhimanyu), when he was engaged in breaking through the car-division protected by Bharadwaja's son himself.

3. Seeing Salya the ruler of the Madras worsted in battle by Subhadra's son with his arrows, his younger brother, inflamed with wrath proceeded to battle, showering shafts in all directions.

4-6. Thereupon the tight-handed son of Arjuna, with his arrows, cut off his antagonist's head and neck, arms and legs, four steeds, umbrella, standard and chariot; his triple bamboo pole fixed to the car, his car-terrace, car-wheels, jokes, shafts, quivers, car-bottom, his banner, his implements of war with which the car was furnished and also the two persons engaged in protecting his car-wheels. No one was

then able to discern him (in consequence of the swiftness of his movement). Salya's brother then pierced through his ornaments and attire, fell down dead on the ground;

7. Like a mighty mountain-crest broken by the overwhelming vehemence of a tempest, his followers then seized with panic fled in all directions.

8. Beholding that feat achieved by Arjuna's son, all creatures were filled with delight and they applauded him, O Bharata, saying, "Well-done," "Well-done,"

9-10. When Salya's brother had thus been killed, many of his soldiers, loudly proclaiming their names, places of residence, and families, rushed against Arjuna's son, being excited with rage, and wielding in their arms various kinds of weapons. All these warriors was possessed of great strength; some of them rushed on their car, others on steeds, others on elephants and some on foot.

11. With the whizz of their arrows, with the loud clatter of their car-wheels, with war-cries, with roars, whoops and exclamations, with leonine roars and cries,

12. With the twang of their bow-strings, and with many other kinds of sound—seeking to terrify Arjuna's son, they rushed at him saying, "You shall not escape us to-day with your life, even if it cost us our own lives."

13. Hearing them thus speak, the son of Subhadra smilingly pierced those with shafts who had smitten him first.

14. Holding diverse kinds of weapons, all beautiful and swift-going, to the gaze of the people, Arjuna's heroic son battled with them mildly.

15. Then, in no way less than Krishna, and Arjuna, Abhimanyu began to display all those weapons he had received from Vasudeva's son and Arjuna.

16. Setting at naught the heavy burden he had drawn upon himself, and dismissing all fears away Abhimanyu then scattered his arrows (in all directions). No interval could then be noticed between his taking up and shooting the shafts.

17. Only his bow drawn to the fullest stretch could then be seen blazing like the burning disc of the sun in the autumnal sky.

18. Then, O Bharata, there were heard the twangs of his bow and the slapping of his palms, resembling the rumble of rain-clouds discharged with thunder during the rains.

19. Richful, unenvious, handsome and devoted to the elders, the son of Subhadra, out of respect for his heroic opponents fought on with arrows and other weapons,

20. Mildly, but gradually he grew fierce, O king, like the blazing autumnal Sun at the end of the rainy seasons.

21. Then like the lustrous orb shooting his rays, he, excited with wrath, shot hundreds of diverse kinds of arrows, all whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings.

22. Then with horse-shoe-headed arrows, calf-tooth-headed shafts, with *Vipatas*, with long shafts with crescent-headed arrows and with *Anjalikas*, that illustrious warrior

23. Began to mangle the car-division of your army, even before the eyes of Bharadwaja's son. Thereupon the army afflicted with his shafts turned its face away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the thirty-eighth chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIX,

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Dhritarastra said—

1. Upon hearing that Subhadra's son, single-handed as he was, held in bay the entire army of my son, my heart, O Sanjaya, is simultaneously filled with shame and delight.

2. O son of Gavalgana, relate to me in detail the fight with prince Abhimanyu, that seems to be much like that between Skanda and the Asuras.

Sanjaya said—

3. Yes, I will tell you all about the dreadful carnage, the dreadful battle that was fought between the one and the many.

4. Then mounted upon his car and exerting his best, Abhimanyu began to shower shafts upon your warriors, all leaders of their foes, mounted on cars and exerting to the best of their might.

5-6. Roving like a circle of fire, he then struck his arrows on Drona, Karna, Kripa, Salya, Drona's son, Bhujā, Virāṭa, Duryodhana, Somadatta's son, the valiant Sakuni, and various other kings and princes and diverse kind of troops.

7. With his excellent weapons slaying his foes, the highly puissant son of Subhadra, endued with fierce energy, was then seen, O Bharata, on all directions.

8. Beholding those feats of Subhadra's son of immeasurable prowess, your troops trembled repeatedly.

9. Thereupon the highly wise and valiant son of Bharadwaja, with his eyes blooming forth in delight, addressing Kripa quickly said.

10. Beholding then Abhimanyu proficient in battle he said these words to Kripa, O Bharata, thereby seeming to pierce the very vitals of your sons.

Drona said:—

11. "Yonder advances the youthful son of Subhadra at the head of the Parthas, imparting delight to all his friends, to king Yudhishthira,

12. To Nakula, to Sahadeva, to Bhimasena the son of Pandu, to his friends, relatives, kinsmen and to all who are passive and neutral spectators.

13. I do not regard any other Bowman equal to him in fight. If he wills, he can annihilate this vast host, but why does he not wish it?"

14. Thereupon hearing the words of Drona that betrayed how delighted he was (at Abhimanyu's feat), your son enraged with Abhimanyu, smiled looking at Drona.

15. Thereafter, king Duryodhana addressing Karna, king Valhika, Dussasana, the ruler of the Madras, and many other mighty car-warriors present, said,—

16. "The preceptor of all venerable Kshatriyas, this one foremost of all those conversant with Brahma, does not, out of affection, wish to slay the son of Arjuna.

17. None can escape him in battle, no, not even the Destroyer himself, if he comes as an antagonist. What then, O friends, shall we say of a mortal? I say this forsooth.

18. He spares the son of Arjuna for he is his pupil. Pupils, their sons and grandsons, are ever dear to the righteous people.

19. Thus protected by Drona Abhimanyu is prizing his valor highly. Indeed he is a fool* proud of himself. Crush him without delay."

20. Thus spoken to, O king, they rushed against the son of Subhadra the daughter of the Satwata race, all inspired with wrath and a desire to slay the latter, before the very eyes of Bharadwaja's son.

21. Then that foremost of the Kurus viz., Dussasana, having heard the words of Duryodhana, addressed these words to him in reply.—

22. "I tell you, O mighty monarch, I will slay this one before the very eyes of the sons of Pandu, and at the sight of the Panchalas themselves.

23. To-day, like the Rahu devouring the maker of the day, I will devour the son of Subhadra." Then raising his voice, Dussasana once more spoke to the Kuru kings thus:—

24. "Hearing that the son of Subhadra has been slain by me, the two Krishnas, both braggards, will surely go to the regions of the departed, leaving this world of animate beings.

25. Then it is evident also, that hearing of the death of these latter, the other sons of Pandu, with all their allies and friends, will give up their lives in the course of a single day, out of despair.

26. It seems therefore, that this one enemy of yours being slain, all the rest of them will be destroyed. Wish me well, O king, even I will slay this your enemy.

27. Having thus spoken, O king, your son Dussasana waxing wrath and sending up a loud war cry, rushed at Subhadra's son, covering him at the same time with a shower of arrows.

28. Then, O subduer of your foes, holding your wrathful son advance furiously towards himself, Abhimanyu wounded him with twenty-six arrows of exceeding sharpness.

29. Then like an elephant with its temples rent, Dussasana infuriate with rage, fought on with Abhimanyu the illustrious son of Subhadra.

30. Then those two heroes well-versed in the art of driving cars, fought on describing beautiful circles, right and left, with their cars.

31. The combatants then set up a loud din, with the sounds of their Pandavas Mridangas Dundubhis, Krackachas, mighty Anakas, Bheris and Gharjharas, mingled with their war-cries, such as is produced by the great reservoir of saline water.

Thus ends the thirty-ninth chapter, the encounter between Dussasana and Abhimanyu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XL.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya Said:—

1. Then the highly intelligent Abhimanyu with his body mangled with arrow-wounds smilingly addressing his antagonist Dus-

sasana stationed before him, spoke these words.

2. "It is by good luck that to-day I find before me that vain warrior of cruel deeds and lost righteousness who ever brays loudly in his own applause.

3. In as much as in the midst of the assembly of courtiers and at the very hearing of king Dhritarastra, you pierced the very virtuous king Yudhishthira with harsh words,

4. And in as much depending on the unfair game at dice and on the skill of Sakuni therein, you, intoxicated with joy, addressed many wild words to Bhima,

5-7. In consequence of all these acts and in consequence of the wrath of all those illustrious heroes, the present fate has overtaken you. O wicked-minded one, do you now reap the fatal fruits of your robbery of other peoples' possessions, of your wrathful temperaments, of your hatred for peace, of your covetousness, of your ignorance, harmfulness and persecution of others, as also of depriving my sires, all fierce bowmen, of their kingdom, and of your own unrighteousness. This day before the eyes of all these warriors I will chastise you with my arrows.

8. This day I will free myself from the burden of anger I bear against you, as also from the debt I owe to my sires and to the angry Krishna, who ever desire your death.

9. To-day, O descendant of the Kuru race, I will in battle pay off the debt I owe to Bhima; you shall not this day escape me with life, provided you do not abandon the fight."

10. Having thus spoken, that mighty-armed hero, that slayer of hostile heroes, fixed on his bow-string an arrow, endued with the effulgence of Yama, Fire, or the Windgod, and calculated to bring about Dussasana's death.

11. Flying towards Dussasana's breast, that arrow pierced his shoulder-joint, up to the very bones, like a snake piercing into an ant hill.

12. Then again he struck Dussasana with twenty-five arrows that resembled fire in their touch, and were shot from his bow drawn back even to his very ears (i.e. fully).

13. Thus deeply pierced and pained to the extreme, Dussasana squatted down on the terrace of his chariot and, O mighty monarch, he became unconscious in a swoon.

14. Thereupon his charioteer quickly carried away from the field the unconscious

Dussasana who had been sorely afflicted by Abhimanyu's arrows.

15. The Pandavas, the sons of Droupadi, and Visaka and the Kekayas and the Panchalas, beholding that act of Subhadra's son sent up a loud roar like that of a lion.

16. Then filled with joy, the troops of the Pandavas struck up numerous musical instruments of various description and shape, from all sides.

17. Beholding that feat achieved by Subhadra's son, they were amazed. Then seeing their most implacable and arrogant adversary thus worsted,

18. The five mighty car-warriors, viz., the five sons of Droupadi bearing on their standards as device the images of Yama, Maruta, Indra and the Asuras.

19. As also Satyaki, Chekitana, Dhristadyumna Sikkhandi, the Kekaya brothers, Dhristaketu, and the Matsyas, the Panchalas, and the Srinjayas,

20. And the Pandavas, were all enraptured and then headed by Yudhishthira, they rushed to battle desirous of breaking through Drona's division.

21. Then there commenced a fierce battle between the foe and your troops, all unretreating heroes, bent on achieving victory.

22. Thus, O king, when the awful battle raged furiously, Duryodhana addressing Radha's son said these words.

23. "Behold the heroic Dussasana worsted by Abhimanyu—he who had been ere now slaying and scorching the foe like the sun himself.

24. Yonder rushes the infuriate Pandavas, looking like so many mighty lions, with weapons uplifted, to the rescue of Subhadra's son."

25. Thereupon inflamed with wrath Karna ever bent on doing good to your son, covered the invincible Abhimanyu with many sharp arrows.

26. Then as if in contempt, the valiant Karna pierced the followers of Subhadra's son in battle with sharp shafts of excellent make.

27. Thereupon the high-souled Abhimanyu, who was longing to meet Drona himself, quickly pierced, O king, Radha's son with seventy-three shafts all whetted on stone.

28. Then there was no car-warrior save and except Drona himself who could have checked that grandson of the wielder of

the thunderbolt, who had then been afflicting the mighty car-warriors sorely.

29. Thereafter displaying many excellent weapons, Karna, that most honoured of all bowmen, desirous of victory pierced Subhadra's son with hundreds of shafts.

30. Then that puissant pupil of Rama, that foremost of all men learned in the use of weapons, began to afflict Abhimanyu who was incapable of being vanquished by the foe.

31. Though thus afflicted with showers of weapons hurled by Radha's son, yet the son of Subhadra equal to an immortal, did not flinch.

32. Thereafter having cut off the bows of warriors, with broad-headed shafts of depressed knots all whetted on stone, Arjuna's son began to afflict Karna in return.

33. Then with arrows, shot from his bow drawn to a circle, and resembling snakes of virulent poison in touch, Abhimanyu quickly cut off Karna's umbrella, standard, horses and charioteer, smiling all the while.

34. Then Karna sped at him five shafts of straight-knots; but the son of Phalguna dauntlessly received all those arrows.

35. Then that valiant hero in a moment cutting off with a single shaft Karna's bow and standard, felled them to the ground.

36. Seeing Karna in such a plight his younger brother, stretching his bow with great force impetuously rushed at Subhadra's son.

37. At this, the Parthas sent up a loud uproar; their followers beat and blew many musical instruments; and they all applauded the sons of Subhadra.

Thus ends the fortieth chapter, the defeat of Karna and Dussasana, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then that brother of Karna armed with a bow and stretching its string repeatedly, soon placed himself between those two high-souled car-warriors.

2. Then as if smiling he pierced the invincible Abhimanyu together with his

umbrella, standard, charioteer and steeds with ten sharp arrows.

3. Then beholding Abhimanyu, who had been achieving superhuman feats after the manner of his father and grandfather, afflicted with those shafts, your warriors became enraptured.

4. Thereupon Abhimanyu smiled and bending his bow shot a winged shaft that lopped off his antagonist's head, and then the latter fell down from his chariot.

5. Then, O monarch, Karna was extremely pained on seeing his brother slain and overthrown like a blossoming *Karshikara* tree thrown down by the wind from the mountain top.

6. Thereafter having compelled Karna to turn back from the field with arrows furnished with *Kanka* feathers, Subhadra's son quickly assailed other mighty bowmen.

7. Then Abhimanyu possessed of fierce energy and great renown, wrought up with rage, began to break through the various division of cars, elephants, steeds, and infantry.

8. Meanwhile Karna who had been afflicted by Abhimanyu with his myriads of shafts, fled away from the field of battle, being borne by fleet steeds. Your army then began to give way.

9. Then when the sky was covered with the arrows of Abhimanyu, like the flights of locusts or thick showers of rain, O king, nothing could be distinguished.

10. Amongst all your warriors then thus slaughtered by Abhimanyu with his sharp shafts, none stayed on the field, except the ruler of the Sindhu.

11. Thereupon, that foremost of princes *viz.*, Subhadra's son, blowing his conch shell, O foremost of the Bharatas, upon the army of the Bharatas.

12. Then like fire set to work on a heap of dried grass, consuming the hostile ranks, Arjuna's son moved in circles amidst the Kaurava host.

13. Breaking through the hostile array, he began to afflict car-warriors, elephant-riders, horse-men and infantry with his great arrows, and thus made the earth impassable with headless trunks.

14. Mangled with the shafts of excellent make, shot from the bow of Subhadra's son, the Kouravas fled in fear of their lives, slaying, as they ran, their own partisans that happened to meet them.

15. Those dreadful shafts of terrible effects and touch, penetrating through car-warriors, elephants and horses, struck on the earth's surface.

16. With weapons in grasp, with finger-preservers, with maces in clutch, and with *Angadas* and decked with golden ornaments, arms were seen to be strewn on the ground.

17. Arrows and bows and swords and *corpus* and heads with ear-rings and garlands were seen on the ground by hundreds.

18. Strewn over with *Upashkaras*, *Adishthanas*, long poles, and with shattered *Akshasas* and broken wheels and yokes, thousands in number,

19. With arrows, bows, swords, fallen standards, with backless bows and shafts scattered about,

20. With the bodies of slain Kshatriyas, horses and elephants, the field of battle looking fierce soon became impassable.

21. Then, as the princes were being slaughtered by Abhimanyu, they created a loud noise enhancing the apprehension of the cowards, by calling one another by their names,

22. That din, O foremost of the Bharatas, filled all the points of the compass with its echo, the son of Subhadra then assailed the Kourava host killing excellent car-warriors, steeds and elephants.

23. Then like fire set to a heap of straw, Arjuna's son began to consume his foes; and he was then seen to stand in the very centre of the Bharata troops.

24. Then surrounded as he was by our troops and covered with dust, we could not obtain sight of him, when he, O Bharata, careered through the cardinal and subsidiary directions.

25. The next moment, O Bharata, we beheld him shining like the mid-day sun, and wrenching the lives out of elephants, steeds and men.

26. We then beheld, O mighty monarch, Abhimanyu afflict his foes. In that battle that grandson of Vasava *vis.*, Abhimanyu equal to Vasava himself in prowess, shone, O mighty monarch, in the very centre of your troops.

Thus ends the forty-first chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the *Abhimanyu-badha* of the *Drona Parva*.

CHAPTER XLII,

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When that heroic Abhimanyu, that veritable child brought up in great luxury,

proud of the strength of his arms, expert in the art of fighting, of noble blood, ready to sacrifice his life in battle,

2. Penetrated into our ranks, borne by his excellent steeds, three years old, was there any one else of the army of Yudhishthira, who then followed him?

Sanjaya said .

3. Yudhishthira, Bhimasena, Sikhandina, Satyaki, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, Dhristadyumna, Virata, Drupada with the Kekayas,

4—5. Dhritaketu, and the Matsyas, all inflamed with rage, rushed to battle. Then Abhimanyu's sires accompanied by his maternal uncles, all accomplished in blaying their opponents, formed in battle-array, rushed, desirous of rescuing him, through the breach he himself had created in the enemies' ranks. Seeing those heroes rush to battle, all your warriors turned their faces away from the field of battle.

6. Thereupon beholding the mighty army of your son give way, your son-in-law, endued with fierce energy, proceeded to rally them.

7. Then, O monarch, Jayadratha the royal son of the Smdritu king, checked the Parthas backed by their troops, when they tried, to rescue their son (Abhimanyu).

8. That mighty bowmen of great skill in archery, *vis.*, the son of Vridhakshatra then checked, displaying his celestial weapons, the Pandavas, like an elephant playing on the low-lands.

Dhritarastra said :—

9. I consider, O Sanjaya, that a heavy burthen was then placed upon the king of the Sindhus, in as much as he had to withstand the enraged Pandavas desirous of rescuing their son.

10. It appears to me that the Sindhu ruler was endowed with wonderful might and heroism. Tell me of the feats and heroism of that illustrious warrior.

11. What gifts did he make, or what sacrifice did he accomplish, or what austerities did he undergo by virtue of which he was able to resist, single-handed, the enraged sons of Pritha?

Sanjaya said :—

12. On the occasion of the abduction of Droupadi, Jayadratha was humiliated by Bhimasena. Out of a feeling of this humiliation, the king performed rigid austerities for securing desirable boons.

13. Withholding his senses from the objects pleasurable to them, and suffering (patiently) the pangs of hunger and thirst, he tortured his body till his swollen veins appeared to view.

14. Chaunting the eternal hymns of the Vedas, he worshipped the God Sarva (Mahadeva). Thereupon that illustrious God, ever compassionate towards his devotees, became gracious on him.

15. The god Hara revealing himself in a dream to the son of the ruler of the Sindhus, addressed him thus:—"Ask the boon you like; I am pleased with you, O Jayadratha, what do you desire?"

16. Thus spoken to by Sarva (Mahadeva), King Jayadratha bowing down to him with folded palms and subdued soul, said:—

17. "I desire that I may check in battle on a single car a single-handed, the Pandavas, possessed though they are of extraordinary prowess and energy." This was the boon which he asked from the god.

18. Thus addressed, that God of gods, spoke unto Jayadratha, in the following manner:—"O gentle one, I accord you the boon; save and except Dhananjaya, the son of Pritha.

19. You shall vanquish in battle the other four sons of Pandu." "So be it" said Jayadratha in answer to what the God of gods had said and then awoke from his sleep.

20. In consequence of having received this boon and through the virtue of the celestial weapon he possessed, he was competent to check the Pandava hosts, single-handed.

21. The twang of his bow-string inspired the hostile warriors with fear, filling at the same time the hearts of your troops with joy.

22. The Kshatriyas then beholding the king of the Sindhus take upon himself the whole burden of the onset, rushed with deafening war-cries at the divisions of Yudhishthira.

Thus ends the forty-second chapter the fight between Jayadratha and the Pandavas, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhananjaya said:

1. You ask me, O mighty monarch, to describe the prowess of the ruler of Sin-

dhus. I shall describe all that in detail. Hear how he fought with the sons of Pandu.

2. Excellent steeds of the Sindhu bred obedient to the behests of the charioteer, and fleet as the wind itself, carried him to the field of battle.

3. He rode a chariot duly furnished with the implements of war, and looking like an aerial castle. His mighty standard decked with the device of an argentine bear, appeared highly resplendent.

4. With white umbrellas, with penons, and with the yak-tails that were used to fan him, with all these emblems of royalty, he appeared beautiful like the moon in the midst of myriad of stars.

5. His iron-made car-fence embossed with pearls, diamonds and gold, appeared effulgent like the welkin bespangled with the luminares.

6. Stretching his mighty bow and shooting numerous shafts, he filled up the Kourava array there where Arjuna's son had created breaches.

7. He wounded Satyaki with three arrows, Vitkodara with eight, Dhrishtadyumna with sixty and Virata with ten and

8. Drupada with five sharp arrows and Sikhandin with ten. He pierced the Kekayas with twenty-five, the Droupadeyas with three shafts each.

9. Then piercing Yudhishthira with seventy arrows, he mangled the rest of his army with a mighty downpour of arrows; and that feat appeared indeed wonderful.

10. Thereupon, O king, the highly puissant son of Dharmata (Yudhishthira), laughing the while, cut off, with a sharp and well-tempered arrow the bow the ruler of the Sindhus.

11. But the latter, taking up within the twinkling of an eye another bow, pierced Pritha's son with ten shafts, and the others following him, with three shafts each.

12. Beholding that light-handedness displayed by Jayadratha, Bhima, with three broad-headed shafts, once more cut off and felled to the ground the bow, the standard and the umbrella of the former.

13. Taking up and stringing another bow, that puissant hero (Jayadratha) cut down, O sire, the standard, the bow, and the steeds of Bhima.

14. Thereupon Bhima with his bow burst open, jumped down from his excellent chariot of which the steeds were slain, and leapt upon the car of Satyaki like a lion leaping upon the top of a hill.

19. The very form of Abhimanyu could not then be discerned, as he careered through the field of battle moving in all the directions, subsidiary and cardinal.

20. His golden coat of mail and his buckler and his ornaments and his arrows and bow only were seen by us then.

21. Then no one was able to cast his eyes on him (Abhimanyu), when he was slaying hostile warriors with his arrows, staying in their midst like the very sun in the heavens.

Thus ends the forty fourth chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XIV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then engaged in depriving the heroes of their lives, the son of Arjuna resembled the Destroyer of all creatures, snatching their lives out of them, at the time of the universal annihilation.

2. Endued with prowess equal to that of Sakra, that grandson of Sakra, namely Abhimanyu of infinite might agitating your force, appeared highly beautiful.

3. Then, O foremost of kings, entering into the very heart of the hostile army, that slayer of those best among the Kshatriyas fell upon Satyasrava like a fierce tiger falling upon a deer.

4. When Satyasrava had thus been pounced upon, the other mighty car-warriors, with haste taking up various kinds of weapons, rushed against Abhimanyu.

5. 'I shall meet him first, I shall meet him first'—boasting in this way, those foremost Kshatriyas then encountered Arjuna's son, out of a desire for slaying him.

6. Then beholding the divisions of those rushing Kshatriyas advance towards him Abhimanyu met them, even like a whale meeting a shoal of small fishes in the sea.

7. Just as tigers never course back from the ocean they fall in, so no one among them who did not fly, returned back with his life, after having encountered Abhimanyu.

8. Then the army began to reel like a boat on the ocean, overtaken by a mighty tempest and having its crew afflicted with fear through the violence of the wind.

9. Thereafter the mighty Rukshmaratha, a son of the ruler of the Madras, dauntlessly spoke these words, with a view to inspire confidence into the hearts of the panic-struck troops.

10. "O heroes, you need not fear, Abhimanyu is nothing so long as I am here. For certain, I will capture him alive (to-day)."

11. Having thus spoken that highly puissant hero rushed upon Abhimanyu, borne on a resplendent chariot duly furnished with the implements of war.

12. Piercing Abhimanyu on the breast with three shafts, he uttered his war cry, and then again, he pierced him on the right and the left arms with three sharp shafts each.

13. But the son of Bhargava cutting off his bow, his right and left arms, and his head graced with beautiful eyes and eyebrows, soon felled them on the earth.

14. Beholding Rukshmaratha the illustrious son of Silya, who had promised to capture alive or consume Abhimanyu, slain by this latter.

15. Many princely warriors, O king, accomplished in smiting down and formidable in battle, all friends of Silya's son (Rukshmaratha), came upon Abhimanyu, with their stand-uds decked with gold, raised high.

16. Then those mighty car-warriors stretching their bows huge like palmyra trees covered the son of Arjuna on all sides with showers of arrows.

17. Beholding Subhadra's heroic and invincible son encountered single-handed as he was, by many brave youthful, irate princes endued with skill acquired through practice and teaching,

18. And also beholding him covered with a shower of arrows (shot by his adversaries), Duryodhana became highly gratified and thought Abhimanyu already a victim of the mansion of Vivisvata's son (Death).

19. Within a wink's time, all those youthful princes each shooting sharp shafts of various shapes and furnished with golden wings, intercepted the son of Arjuna from the view.

20. Then, O sire, we beheld Abhimanyu's car and driver and his standard, covered with arrows, as if by flights of locusts.

21. Thereupon like an elephant pierced deeply, the son of Arjuna, deeply pierced with those arrows, became inflamed with rage, and he then invoked into existence

the *Gautharna* weapon and its consequent illusions, O Bharata.

22. This weapon was secured by Arjuna from the Gandharvas Tamvuru and others, through his ascetic austerities. Now Abhimanyu confounded his foes with that weapon.

23. He was then seen, O king, sometimes as a single individual, sometimes as a hundred and sometimes as a thousand. He then moved over the field, displaying his weapons, like a circle of fire.

24. Then, O king, confounding the kings hostile to him with the illusions caused by his air, his coat of mail, and his weapons, he mangled, O king, their bodies in hundred pieces.

25. The vital breaths of living creatures were then snatched out of them by his arrows, and, O king, they reached the other world when their bodies fell down on earth.

26. The son of Phalgunā with sharp broad-headed shafts, cut off their bows, their steeds, their charioteers, their standards and arms with bracelets, and also their graceful heads.

27. Like a grove of mango trees, five years old and on the point of bearing fruit, laid low by the tempest, those hundred princes were slain and felled by the son of Subhadra.

28. Beholding those young and delicate heroes reared up with all possible care and resembling furious snakes of virulent poison, slain by the single-handed son of Subhadra, Duryodhana became filled with fear.

29. Then beholding his car-warriors, his elephants, his steeds and foot-soldiers, smashed, the enraged Duryodhana quickly rushed at Abhimanyu.

30. For a moment only a fierce battle raged between them, which virtually remained unfinished when your son, afflicted with arrows turned away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the forty-fifth chapter the defeat of Duryodhana, in the Abhimanyu-bhāra of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLVI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritirāstra said :—

1. What you are saying to me, O Suta, about the fierce and awful battle between one and the many, and the victory of that high-souled one,

2. This story of the prowess of Subhadra's son is wonderful and note the less incredible. But I do not regard it altogether impossible with respect to them whose sole refuge is virtue.

3. After Duryodhana had been repulsed and the hundred princes slain, what measure was adopted by my warriors against Subhadra's son.

Sanjaya said :—

4. Their mouths were parched up and their eyes began to roll. They perspired and their hair stood erect. Desponding of conquering the enemy, they exerted their best to fly away.

5. Abandoning their slain brothers, fathers, sons, friends, relatives and kinsmen, they fled urging their elephants and steeds on.

6. Beholding then the troops thus broken, Drona and his son, and Vrihadvala, Kripa, Duryodhana, Karna, Kritavarman, and Suvala's son,

7. All these warriors excited with rage rushed against the invincible son of Subhadra. Then those warriors also, O king, were almost beat back by your grandson (Abhimanyu).

8. A single warrior only, viz., Lakshmana, brought up in luxury, versed in the use of arrows and weapons, endued with great energy, and dauntless through pride and youth, rushed against Arjuna's son.

9. Preyed upon by anxiety on account of his son, his father (Duryodhana) turned back, and other mighty car-warriors also followed Duryodhana's example.

10. These warriors all showered arrows on him (Abhimanyu), like clouds showering in torrents rains on mountains; he, in return, though single-handed, routed them like the div and confused wind scattering masses of clouds.

11—12. Then like one infuriate elephant meeting another in the same state, Krishna's nephew encountered your grandson Lakshmana, invincible, of great personal beauty, standing near his father with his bow ready for use, endued with heroism, brought up in all luxury and resembling the son of the God of wealth.

13. Encountering Lakshmana, that slayer of hostile heroes, that son of Subhadra, was pierced on the breast and the arms with exceedingly sharp shafts.

14. Then that mighty-armed grandson of yours (Abhimanyu), O mighty monarch, excited with rage like a snake struck with a rod, addressing your other grandson (Lakshmana), thus spoke :—

15. "Look well on this earth, for you shall be required soon to go to another world. I will despatch you to the abode of Death even before the very eyes of your on-looking friends".

16. Having thus spoken, that slayer of hostile heroes, that mighty-armed hero, viz., Subhadra's son, took out a broad-headed shaft that resembled a snake that had recently cast its slough off.

17. That shaft sped by the force of his arms, cut off the beautiful head of Lakshmana, graced with ear-rings and a beautiful nose and charming locks and eye-brows.

18. Beholding Lakshmana slain, people began to wail aloud saying 'Oh' and 'Alas.' Thereupon at the death of his dear-loved son, Duryodhana became inflamed with rage.

19. And then that foremost of the Kshatriyas commanded his other Kshatriya warriors saying 'Slay him.' Thereupon Drona, his son, Kripa, Karna, and Vrihadvala, and

20. Kritavarman the son of Hridika, these six warriors surrounded Subhadra's son. But the son of Arjuna piercing them with whetted shafts, and beating them back,

21—23. Angrily and with vehemence, fell upon the mighty division of the ruler of the Sindhus. Thereupon the Kalingas, the Nishadhas, and the puissant son of Kratha, clad in mail, covered his path with their mighty elephant division. The battle then that commenced between Abhimanyu and the other warriors was dreadful and fierce to the extreme.

23. Then the son of Arjuna began to crush that division of elephants, like the wind that blows in all directions destroying masses of clouds in the heaven.

24. Thereafter Kratha covered Arjuna's son with showers of arrows; meanwhile many other car-warriors headed by Drona, turning back to the field of battle,

25. Rushed at Subhadra's son, discharging numerous weapons of celestial make. Beating back all of them with arrows, Arjuna's son afflicted Kratha's son,

26. With innumerable groups of arrows, in all haste and inflamed with a desire for slaying his antagonist. Then the bow, the arrows, the bracelets, the arms, and the head decked with a diadem, of Kratha's son,

27. His umbrella, standard, charioteer and horses, were all felled by Abhimanyu. When that one (Kratha's son) possessed of a high lineage and character, acquainted

with the Śrutis and endowed with wealth of weapons and fame was thus slain, almost all the remaining heroic warriors turned away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the forty-sixth chapter, the slaughter of Kratha's son, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva

CHAPTER XLVII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When that youthful and invincible son of Subhadra, ever unretreating in battle, penetrating into the ranks of my troops was achieving feats worthy of his own family,

2. And when borne by his three-year-old steeds of great strength and excellent breed, he appeared to sail through the skies, what heroes of my army then strove to resist him ?

Sanjaya said :—

3. Penetrating into the heart of your troops, Abhimanyu the delighter of the Pandavas, with his sharp arrows compelled all the kings to turn their faces away from the field of battle.

4. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna the son of Drona, Vrihadvala and Kritavarman the son of Hridika, these six car-warriors surrounded him

5. Beholding a very heavy burden (of keeping the rest of the Pandavas at bay) placed on the shoulder of the Sindhu king, your troops, O mighty monarch, assailed Yudhisthira.

6. Other mighty warriors stretching their bows full six cubits long, covered the heroic son of Subhadra with a shower of arrows.

7. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Subhadra's son, assailed by means of his arrows, all those mighty car-warriors all well accomplished in all kinds of learning.

8. And he then pierced Drona with fifty arrows and Vrihadvala with twenty; and Kritavarman with eighty and Kripa with sixty.

9. The son of Arjuna then pierced Ashwathaman with ten shafts furnished with wings of gold, charged with great force and shot from the bow drawn back to the very ear.

10. Then in the very midst of the hostile troops, the son of Phaguna pierced Karna in one of his ears with an excellent barbed arrow, carefully tempered and whetted.

11. Then having felled Kripa's steeds and the two supporters of his flanks, Abhimanyu pierced him on his breast with ten shafts.

12. Thereafter the valiant Abhimanyu slew the warlike Vrindaraka the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus, even before the very eyes of your heroic son.

13. Then Drona's son doubtlessly struck Abhimanyu with twenty-five short arrows, when the latter was occupied in slaying the best among his enemies.

14. Thereupon, O Sire, Arjuna's son pierced Aswathaman in return with whetted shafts, before the presence of all the warriors of your army.

15. Then Drona's son having pierced Abhimanyu with sixty fierce and resplendent shafts of exceeding sharpness could not make the latter tremble, and then the latter remained unmoved like the Mamaka hills.

16. Then that hero of puissant might and fierce energy, pierced the son of Drona who had been afflicting him, with thirty seven arrows, all straight-going and furnished with wings of gold.

17. Thereupon Drona desirous of saving his son, stuck hundred shafts on Abhimanyu, and Aswathaman also desirous of rescuing his father, pierced him with sixty shafts.

18. Karna then pierced Abhimanyu with twenty-two broad-headed shafts, Kirtavarman with fourteen, Virhadvala with fifty and Kripa the son of Saradwata with ten.

19. In return, Abhimanyu pierced each of them with ten shafts. Then the ruler of the Kosalas pierced him on the breast with a barbed dart.

20. Abhimanyu then felled on the ground his horses, his standards, his bow and his charioteer. Thereupon deprived of the use of his car, the king of the Kosalas grasping his sword and shield,

21. Strive to take off the head, graced with ear-rings, of Phalguna's son, from his trunk. Then the latter, pierced the ruler of the Kosalas, by name prince Virhadvala on the breast with arrows, and the latter fell down with his breast cleft open. Then ten thousand high-souled kings broke away,

22. Uttering abusive language (against Duryodhana), armed though they were with swords and bows. Thereafter having slain

Virhadvala in battle, Subhadra's son careered through the field, and paralysed the mighty car-warriors of your army with a downpour of arrowy showers.

** This ends the forty-seventh chapter, the defeat and death of Virhadvala, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.*

CHAPTER XLVIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said —

1. Once more did the son of Arjuna pierce Karna on his car, with barbed arrows; and then for angering the latter, again pierced him with fifty shafts more.

2. Thereupon Radha's son pierced him in return with as many arrows. Covered all over with arrows, O Bharata, he then looked exceedingly beautiful.

3. Excited with wrath, Abhimanyu also caused Karna to be covered over with streams of blood, the heroic Karna also appeared beautiful being mangled with shaft-wounds and bathed in blood.

4. Then both those high-souled warriors, mangled with arrow-wounds and steeped in blood, appeared like two *Kinsukas* covered with blossoms,

5. Then Subhadra's son slew six of Karna's ministers all versed in various modes of warfare, together with their horses, charioteer, car and standards.

6. Then Abhimanyu fearlessly pierced the rest of the mighty car-warriors in return, with ten shafts each; that feat of his seemed exceedingly wonderful.

7. Thereafter having slain the son of the ruler of the Magadhas with six swift-coursing arrows, Abhimanyu felled the youthful Aswaketu together with his horses and charioteer.

8. Next slaying with a sharp, horse-shoe-headed arrow, the Bhoja prince of Martikavata having the device of an elephant on his banner, the son of Arjuna sent up a tremendous war-cry and began to scatter his arrows on all sides.

9. Thereupon the son of Drona pierced his four horses with four arrows, and charioteer with one shaft and then he pierced Arjuna's son with ten arrows.

10. Thereafter Krishna's nephew having pierced Dussasana's son with ten swift-coursing arrows, spoke these words at the top of his voice, with eyes red in rage,

11. "Your father has fled from the battle like a veritable coward. It is fortunate that you know how to fight. But to-day you shall not escape me alive."

12. Having spoken only these words, he hurled at him a *Narayana* burnished by the forger himself.

13. Then leaving alone the son of Drona, Arjuna's son struck Salya with three arrows. Hun Salya pierced in return with nine shafts furnished with vulture feathers,

14. On the breast, like one not at all afraid. That feat appeared to be highly wonderful. The son of Arjuna then cutting off his bow and slaying his two flank supporters,

15-16. Pierced him with six non-made shafts, and then Salya ascended another chariot. Then having slain Satrunjaya, Chandraketu, Mahamegha, Suvarchasam, and Suiyavasi, he pierced the son of Suvala. Suvala then piercing him with three arrows, thus addressed Duryodhana —

17. 'Let all of us united together, crush this one, for, fighting singly he will slay us all. O king, with the assistance of Drona and Kripa and others, do you think out the means of slaying this one.'

18. Thereafter Vikartana's son Karna, addressing Drona said these words — "I tell us the means of his death, before he slays us all."

19. Thereupon the fierce bow-man Drona replied to them all saying — "With all your watchfulness, have you been able to detect any weakness in this youthful prince?"

20. He is careering in all directions, yet has any of you been able to find out any laches in the prince? Behold the lightness of hands of this son of Arjuna, this foremost of all men!

21. In the course of his car-motion, only his bow drawn to a complete circle can be seen and not his arrows, so swiftly does he let them off!

22. Indeed this slayer of hostile heroes, this son of Subhadra is affording me great delight, though with his shafts he is afflicting my vital limbs, and confounding my senses.

23. This son of Subhadra careering through the field of battle, delights me greatly, inasmuch as many mighty car-warriors inflamed with rage cannot detect any the slightest weakness in him.

24. I do not find any very great difference between the wielder of the *Gandiva* bow and this one of great lightness of

hands, filling the points of the compass with his mighty shafts."

25. Then once more Karna, afflicted with the arrows of Arjuna's son said to Drona:— "Afflicted sore by Abhimanyu, I am staying here, only because, as a warrior, I should stay here."

26. The fierce and exceedingly dreadful darts, corroding like fire of this very furious prince are this day sucking my heart's strength in battle."

27. Then softly and with a smile, the preceptor replied unto Karna saying:— "This Abhimanyu is faithful, his prowess is great and his armour is incapable of being penetrated into."

28. I have taught the father of this hero, the diverse methods of wearing coats of mail; assuredly this subjugator of hostile fortresses, knows all those methods of wearing armours.

29. But exerting yourself carefully, you can, with arrows, cut off his bow, his bow-string, the reins of his steeds and his two supporters of the flanks.

30. O mighty bow-man, O son of Radha, if you are competent, then do all these. Then compelling him to turn his face away from the field, do you strike him from behind.

31. As long as he wields the bow, he is incapable of being defeated even by all the Gods and the Asuras united together. So if you can deprive him of the use of his car and his bow."

32. Then, Vikartana's son, Karna, hearing those words of the preceptor quickly cut off Abhimanyu's bow with his arrows, when the latter was light-handedly scattering his shafts.

33. Then Kriavarman of the Bhoja race, slew his steeds, and Kripa the son of Gotama despatched his two flank-supporters. The rest covered him with arrowy showers, when he was deprived of the use of his bow.

34. Then these six mighty car-warriors with great activity, when activity was so necessary, ruthlessly covered that young careless hero who was fighting with them single-handedly, with showers of arrows.

35. Then that handsome hero whose car had been rendered useless and whose bow had been cut off, grasping his sword and buckler and remembering his duty, jumped up into the sky.

36. Exhibiting great prowess and great lightness, Arjuna's son roved in the air like the king of the birds, in various motions, known as *Koriska* and others.

37. 'With the sword in his hand he may fall upon me,'—thinking thus those mighty bowmen with their eyes up-turned and very watchful for finding Abhimanyu's weakness, began to pierce him.

38. Then that conqueror of enemies, *vis.*, Drona of mighty energy quickly cut off the jewel-decked hilt of Abhimanyu's sword with a single shaft furnished with a horse-shoe-head.

39. Then Radha's son also cut off his excellent buckler with many sharp arrows. Then deprived of his sword and his shield he came down from the sky upon the ground, with all his limbs intact. Then raising a car-wheel, he furiously rushed against Drona.

40. His person-shining with the dust from the car-wheel and himself wielding the car-wheel in his upraised arm, Abhimanyu appeared highly beautiful, and for a while imitating the son of Vasudeva, he became terribly fierce in that battle.

41. With his robes dyed with the blood flowing in profusion (from his wounds), with his brow formidable in consequence of the wrinkles thereon, himself sending up loud war-cries, that highly powerful Abhimanyu appeared superbly beautiful staying in the midst of those foremost of kings.

Thus ends the forty-eighth chapter, the fight of Abhimanyu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XL.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. That delighter of Vishnu's sister (Subhadra), that Atiratha Abhimanyu, then furnished with the weapon of Vishnu himself, looked highly beautiful like a second Janardhana on the field of battle.

2. With the ends of his locks blazing in the air, with that best of weapons raised in his hands, his person became difficult of being looked at even by the very gods. The rulers of the earth beholding it,

3. And the wheel in his hands, became seized with anxiety. They then cut it off into many fragments. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, the nephew of Krishna took up a heavy mace.

4. Then the mighty-armed Abhimanyu deprived of his car, his bow, his sword and his car-wheel by the enemy, rushed (with that mace in his hand) upon Ashwathaman.

5. Then, O foremost of kings, Aswathaman, beholding that upraised mace resemble the blazing bolt of heaven, leapt off three steps from the terrace of his car.

6. Slaying with his mace the horses and the two flank-supporters of Aswathaman, the son of Subhadra, with his body covered all over with arrows looked like a porcupine.

7. Then Abhimanyu crushed down on the ground Suvala's son Kalikeya and slew seventy-seven of the latter's followers of the Gandhara race.

8. Next he slew ten car-warriors of the clan of Brahma-vasatiya; and then seven warriors of the Kekiyas and then ten huge elephants.

9. Then he pressed down upon the ground the car and horses of Dussasana's son. Thereupon, O sire, Dussasana's invincible son excited with rage and upraising his mace,

10. Rushed against Abhimanyu crying at same time, "Wait" "Wait." Then those two heroes with maces upraised, both desirous of compassing one another's death,

11. Those two cousins, began to strike one another, like the three-eyed (Mahadeva) and the Asura Andhaka fighting in the days of yore. Then striking one another by the ends of their clubs, they both fell down on the ground,

12. Like two uprooted standards raised in honour of Indra. Then that enhancer of the glory of the Kurus namely Dussasana's son rising first,

13. Smote Subhadra's son on the crown of his head as the latter was rising up. Confounded with the great force of that mace-stroke and overpowered by the fatigue of the fight,

14. That slayer of hostile heroes namely Subhadra's son fell down senseless on the ground. Thus, O king, was the one slain by many in battle,

15. One who grinded the whole army of the Kurus, like an elephant crushing lotus-stems. Then that heroic warrior slain by the Kurus, appeared beautiful like a wild elephant slain by the hunter.

16. Then your troops surrounded the fallen hero, who then looked like an extinguished fire that had consumed a whole forest during the summer season;

17. Or like a tempest with its fury subsided after it has broken down numerous tree-tops; or like the setting sun that had scorched the Bharata army with its rays.

18-19. Or like the moon devoured up by the Rahu, or like the ocean with its waters dried up. Then the mighty car-warriors of your army beholding Abhimanyu whose countenance wore the splendour of the full moon, and whose eyes were black like the wings of the raven, lie prostrate on the naked earth, uttered repeated lion-like roars being filled with great delight.

20. Indeed, O king, your warriors were transported with delight, while tears rolled down from the eyes of the warriors of the other host.

21. Then beholding that hero lying prostrate on the ground like the moon dropped from the skies, many creatures and rulers of men, on the skies, uttered woeful cries saying:—

22. "Slain by the six mighty car-warriors of Dhritarashtra's host headed by Drona, this single hero is lying on the field of battle. We hold this to be very unfair."

23. When that hero had been slaughtered, the earth appeared highly beautiful like the starry firmament decked with the full-moon herself.

24. The earth was then covered over with arrows furnished with golden wings, and inundated with waves of blood. And overspread with the beautiful heads of the heroes, adorned with ear-rings,

25. And precious and variegated head-gears, and streamers and *chamaras*, and splendid blankets, and gem-embossed weapons of good make,

26. And the bright ornaments of cars and horses and men and elephants, and sharp and well-tempered swords looking like snakes freed from their slough,

27. And bows, and shattered arrows, and darts and scimitars and spears and *kampanas*, and various other kinds of weapons, (offensive and defensive), she looked exceedingly beautiful.

28. In many places the field of battle became impassable being choked with dead and dying steeds bespattered with blood all felled by the son of Subhadra, and lying with their riders slain.

29. With iron goads, and elephants prodigious as hills, furnished with shields and weapons, and with standards lying about, crushed with shafts;

30. With excellent chariots deprived of steeds and charioteers and their warriors, lying scattered on the field, crushed by elephants and looking like agitated lakes;

31. With large bodies of foot soldiers, armed with various weapons and lying

slain on the field, the earth assuming an awful aspect struck terror into the hearts of the cowards.

32. Beholding Abhimanyu equal to the sun or the moon in splendour he dead on the field, your troops obtained great joy whilst the Pandavas were highly distressed.

33. When the young Abhimanyu still in his minority was slain, all the troops of the Pandavas fled even before the very eyes of the very virtuous king Yudhishthira.

34. Then upon the death of Abhimanyu, seeing his troops routed, Ajatasatru Yudhishthira addressed these words to the heroic warriors of his army:—

35. "This heroic son of Subhadra who without turning back from the battle has been slain by the enemy, has ascended to heaven. Stay you all, and do not fear. We shall yet conquer the foe."

36. Possessed of great energy and great effulgence, the virtuous king Yudhishthira that best of all warriors, himself overwhelmed with grief, tried to console them with those words.

37. (He went on) —Having at first slain many hostile princes resembling snakes of virulent poison, the son of Arjuna has followed in their wake.

38. Having slain ten thousand car-warriors, and that mighty car-warrior namely the ruler of the Kosalas, Abhimanyu, equal to Krishna and Arjuna, has indubitably gone to the mansion of Sakra (Indra).

39. Having slain car-warriors, steeds, foot soldiers and elephants by thousand, he was not satiated with what he achieved in battle. We should not bewail this performer of pious deeds, he surely has attained the regions of righteousness, that men acquire by deeds of piety.

Thus ends the forty-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Abhimanyu in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER I.

(ABIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thus having slain one of their best warriors and having been afflicted with their shafts and covered with blood, we returned to our quarters in the evening.

2. Gazed at by the foe and nearly senseless and overpowered with fatigue, we then,

O mighty monarch, slowly left the field of battle.

3. Then approached that wonderful hour, that joining between the day and the night, harbingered by the inauspicious yells of the jackals; and the sun then assuming the pale-red tint of the lotus-filaments, went down below the horizon, having neared the Western hills.

4. Then the sun robbed the radiance of our excellent swords, lances, scimitars, car-fences, shields and ornaments; and causing the sky and the earth to assume the self-same hue, he then betook to his favourite shape of fire.

5. The earth was then covered over with motionless carcasses of myriads of elephants, all lifeless, resembling the peaks of cloud-clapt hills cleft open by the bolt of Heaven, and with their banners and goa's scattered about and their guides dislodged from their backs.

6. The field of battle appeared beautiful with huge chariots splintered into pieces and with their warriors, drivers, ornaments, steeds, standards, streamers crushed, shattered and torn to pieces. Those cars then, O monarch, resembled animate beings deprived of their vital breaths by the enemy with his arrows.

7. Then the earth assumed a dreadful and repulsive aspect, being strewn over with numerous horses and their riders all lying dead, with precious housings and blankets of various kind scattered about, and in consequence of the tongues, teeth, entrails and eyes of those creatures being drawn out of their places.

8. Men adorned with precious armours, ornaments and garments and weapons, deprived of life, lay prostrate on the field with slain horses and elephants and shattered chariots, on the naked earth, totally helpless, although quite deserving of precious blankets and beds.

9. Greatly delighted dogs, jackals, and crows, and numerous other flesh-eating birds, and wolves and hyenas, and ravens and other blood-drinking animals, and various clans of Rakshasas, and large bodies of Pisachis, repairing to the field of battle,

10. Tore open the corpses and drank their fat marrow and blood and then fell upon eating their flesh. They began also to drink the secretions of rotten corpses, while some of the Rakshasas laughed terribly and dragged out dead bodies by thousands.

11—12. An awful river like the Vaitarani itself difficult of being tided over, was created there by many best of car-warriors.

Its waters were formed by the blood of slain creatures. Chariots formed the rafts on which to cross it; elephants constituted its rocks, and the heads of men formed its pebbles. It was made with the flesh of slain elephants, men, and horses. Various kinds of weapons constituted the garlands floating on it. That dreadful current of blood flowed through the middle of the field of battle carrying with it living being to the doleful abodes of Death.

13. Drinking and eating in that stream numerous Pisachas of terrible and repulsive aspect rejoiced. Dogs and jackals and flesh eating birds, all partaking of the same food, and striking terror into the hearts of the living creatures held a great feast (on its banks).

14. Then at the advent of night, looking upon that fierce field of battle that had increased largely the population of Deaths regions, and that was infested with dancing headless trunks of soldiers, they slowly went away from it.

15. Then as they left it, they saw the mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu who resembled India himself, lying on the held of battle, with precious ornaments displaced and falling off, and appearing like a sacrificial fire on the alter no longer fed by oblations of clarified butter.

Thus ends the fiftieth chapter, the description of the field of battle, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

When that hero that leader of a car-division viz., Subhadra's son had been slain in battle, leaving their cars and doffing their coats of mail and throwing aside their bows, all the Pandavas,

2. Sat surrounding King Yudhisthira. They were then brooding upon their grief with their hearts occupied with the thought of the deceased son of Subhadra.

3. Then upon the death of his brother's son, the heroic and mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu, King Yudhisthira began to lament totally unmanned by grief.

Yudhisthira said :—

4. Desirous of doing an act agreeable to me, he (Abhimanyu) penetrated the array of Drona with the least difficulty.

like a lion penetrating into the midst of a herd of kine.

5. Meeting with him in battle, fierce bowmen, endowed with heroism, accomplished in the use of weapons, and incapable of being easily defeated in battle, were compelled to turn back.

6. Our implacable enemy Dussasana having encountered him in battle, was quickly compelled by his shafts to retreat, being nearly deprived of his senses.

7. Having crossed the ocean-like host of Drona's troops difficult of being defeated, that nephew of Krishna was despatched to Death's mansion, upon encountering the son of Dussasana.

8. Oh, now that Abhimanyu is slain, how shall I look upon Kunti's son Arjuna or upon the auspicious Subhadra bereft of her that dear-loved son!

9. What meaningless, disjointed and incoherent words shall we have to say to-day to both Hrishikesha and Dhananjaya!

10. It is myself, desirous of my own good, and intent on victory, that have done this injury to Subhadra, Arjuna and Keshava!

11. A covetous man never finds his own short-comings; and it is from folly, that covetousness proceeds. Desirous of collecting the honey, I could not see that such a fall threatened me.

12. He who was a mere boy, and who should have been indulged with good food, conveyance, beds and ornaments, alas, even such a boy was placed by us in the thick of battle!

13. Like a steed of spirited mettle that sacrifices itself rather than obey the reins, how could that boy of tender years, unskilled in the modes of warfare reap good in such a perilous situation?

14. Alas, after him, to-day we also shall lay ourselves down on the field of battle, being consumed by the glances of grief cast by Vibhatsu inflamed with rage.

15. Arjuna is free from covetousness, intelligent, bashful, forbearing, handsome, powerful, endowed with well-developed limbs, respectful to the elders, heroic, amiable, and devoted to truth;

16. The feats of that one of fierce deeds even the gods applaud; that one of puissant energy slew the Nivatakavachas and also the Kalakeyas.

17. By him were the opponents of the great Indra, the dwellers of the golden cities, viz. the Poulamas slain with their followers, within the twinkling of an eye;

18. That lord gives assurance of safety to those who seek to be protected from their enemies. Alas, to-day, we have not been competent through fear, to save the son even of that one!

19. Surely a great fear has overtaken the mighty host of the son of Dhritarashtra. Filled with rage at the slaughter of his son, the son of Pritha (Arjuna) without doubt extirpate the Kouravas.

20. It is also evident that the mean-minded Duryodhana, having mean counsellors, that destroyer of his own partisans, seeing the destruction of his troops and overtaken by grief, shall give up his life.

21. Beholding this son of Indra's son endowed with unequalled energy and prowess-fallen on the field of battle, neither victory, nor kingdom, nor immortality, nor equality of rank with the celestials, does afford me the least joy."

Thus ends the fifty-first chapter, the lamentations of Yudhishthira, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER I. II.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)→

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thus when the son of Kunti, king Yudhishthira, was indulging in lamentations, there came to him the mighty sage Krishna Dwaipayana.

2. Then having duly worshipped him, Yudhishthira resumed his seat; and afflicted with grief at the death of his brother's son, he then thus addressed the *Rishi*.

Yudhishthira said:—

3. The son of Subhadra has been slain in battle when fighting with many, by several fierce bowmen of vicious tendencies, who, mighty car-warriors as they were, surrounded him on all sides.

4. That slayer of hostile heroes that son of Subhadra, was a mere child in years and in understanding. And he fought in battle against overwhelming numbers.

5. During the course of the fight I said to him "Open a passage for us." Then he penetrated into the hostile array, and then we could not follow him, prevented by the ruler of the Sindhus.

6. Those who live by fighting should surely desire equal combats. But this battle that the enemy fought with Abhimanyu was an extremely unfair one.

7. It is this that burns me with the fire of grief, and draws tears of sorrow from my eyes. Brooding over this thought I can not regain the tranquility of my mind.

Sanjaya said:—

8. Then the almighty Vyasa addressing Yudhisthira who was thus bewailing and was unmanned by the force of his grief, spoke the following words.

Vyasa said:—

9. O Yudhisthira, O son of superior wisdom, O son who are well-learned in all the branches of knowledge, O foremost of the Bharatas, people of your stamp are never confounded in seasons of calamity.

10. This hero (Abhimanyu), this foremost of all male beings, has attained paradise after having slain numerous enemies in battle and having achieved many feats not at all boy-like.

11. O Yudhisthira, this law (that created being shall die) can not be violated. O Bharata, Death takes away all,—Gods, Danavas, and Gandharvas, (without exception).

Yudhisthira said:—

12. These rulers of earth, all endued with great might, are now lying on the bare ground of the battle-field being slain and deprived of their senses.

13. Some of them possessed strength equal to that of ten thousand elephants; some, on the other hand, possessed the impetus and force of the very tempest. They have all been slain in battle by beings of their species and are all equal now.

14. I do not see the slayer of these created beings in battle, (save one of their own class). They were possessed of prowess and endued with might and energy.

15. Alas even those who entertained in their heart the hope of conquering one another in battle, are now lying slain deprived of their senses, in spite of all their wisdom.

16. The significance of the word 'Death' has to-day been clearly brought home (to our minds), as almost all these rulers of earth possessed of fierce prowess, lie dead on the field of battle.

17. These heroes having succumbed to their foes, are now lying motionless and shorn of their pride. Many princes inflamed with wrath have fallen upon the fire of their antagonist's anger.

18. On this point a great doubt has taken possession of me, namely, whence has the word "dead" been derived? Whose offspring

is Death? whence does it come, and why does it take away creatures? O you equal to a celestial, O grandsire, speak to me about all this.—

Sanjaya said:—

19. Then that illustrious sage spoke these comforting words to Yudhisthira, the son of Kunti, who had been questioning him in the above manner.

Vyasa said:—

20. On this subject, O monarch, an ancient story is cited as an example,—story that was related to Akampana by Narada.

21. So far as I know, O king, Akampana, while in this world, was also afflicted with the overwhelming and unbearable grief caused by his son's death.

22. I shall now recount to you the excellent story of the origin of Death. Hearing that story you shall be freed from grief and from the bondage of affection.

23. Listen to me, O Sire, as I go on repeating that ancient story. This story is excellent, and enhances the period of life, and kills sorrow and bestows health.

24. It is holy, capable of destroying large numbers of foes, and the most auspicious of all auspicious things. Verily this story is like the study or recital of the Vedas themselves.

25. It should, O king, be every morning listened to by those foremost of the twice-borns, who desire to obtain long-lived sons, sovereignty and their own welfare.

26. In the days of yore during the *Krita-Yuga*, O Sire, there lived a certain king by name Akampana. Once on a time, on the field of battle, amongst his foes, he was on the point of succumbing to his enemies.

27. He had a son by name Hari, who was equal to Narayana himself in might; he was exceedingly handsome, accomplished in the use of weapons, intelligent, powerful and equal to Sakra in battle.

28. Surrounded by countless foes on the field of battle, he shot thousands of shafts at the warriors and elephants that encompassed him.

29. Having achieved many feats difficult of being achieved, that afflicter of foes, O Yudhisthira, was slain amidst his troops by his adversaries.

30. Performing the funeral ceremonies of his son, king Akampana became purified. But bewailing his son, day and night, he could not regain his peace of mind.

31. Then cognisant of his grief caused by the death of his son, there came near him the celestial sage Narada himself.

32. That monarch of illustrious qualities, beholding the sage come, worshipped him duly and then spoke to him these words.

33. And then that ruler of men spoke to the Rishi all that had happened, his defeat by his foes and the slaughter of his son by them.

Akampana said:—

34. My son of great energy and might equal to Indra or Vishnu himself in effulgence, has been killed in battle by his numerous enemies, when engaged in fighting vigorously with them.

35. But, O illustrious sage, who is this Death, what is his prowess, might and manliness? O foremost of intelligent beings, I desire to know the real truth about all these questions.

Vyasa said:—

36. Having heard those words of his, the lord Narada, that bestower of boons, related this story that is capable of destroying the great sorrow caused by the death of one's son.

37. Hear, O mighty-armed monarch, this long story, exactly, O ruler of earth, as I myself have heard it.

38. In the beginning of the creation, the Grandsire Brahma created all beings. Then that highly powerful one, seeing that the beings of his creation suffered no decay,

39. Fell to thinking, O king, as to how he should cause their destruction. Meditating long over the subject, he then failed to find out any means of destruction, O ruler of earth.

40. (Then he waxed wroth); and in consequence of that wrath then, a fire sprang out from the skies. That fire spread in all the quarters of heaven, and it began to consume all the regions of the universe.

41. Thereat heaven, earth and the welkin, all became overspread with tongues of flame. And that Almighty lord then burnt down the universe with its mobile and immobile creatures and objects.

42. Then mobile and immobile, all creatures were annihilated. Verily the puissant Brahma did all this, frightening the worlds with the fierceness of his angers.

43. Thereupon Hara, otherwise called Sthanu, wearing matted locks on his head, that Lord of all the night-rangers, sought shelter from the divine Brahma that foremost of all gods.

44. Thus when Sthanu had fallen (at Brahma's feet) desirous of doing good to the creatures, that highest divinity, the foremost

of all ascetics, burning with effulgence said:—

45. What desire of yours shall we fulfil, O you that deserve to have all your wishes gratified! O son, you are born out of our will. We shall accomplish all that is dear unto you. Speak, O Sthanu, what you desire (to have).

Thus ends the fifty-second chapter, the consolation of Yudhishthira's grief, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sthanu said:—

1. O Lord, you did take great pains for creating various creatures. All these different sorts of beings have been created and reared by you.

2. Those very creatures are now being burnt down by the fire of your anger. Seeing their condition, I am filled with compassion; O Lord, O illustrious One, be merciful on them.

Brahma said:—

3. I had no desire for destroying the worlds. I wanted to leave them in peace; I always desired the earth's welfare. But then anger took possession of me.

4. The goddess of earth, over-burdened with the heavy weight of creatures, always solicited me for destroying the beings on her surface, O mighty God.

5. Then though thinking in many ways, I could not find out the means for destroying the infinite creation. At this, anger entered into me.

Rudra said:—

6. Be propitiated, O ruler of the universe, and do not cherish wrath for the destruction of creatures. Do you not any longer destroy the mobile and immobile creatures.

7. Through your grace, O almighty Lord, the universe is divided in three divisions, *viz.*, the Past, the Present and the Future. Let it remain as it is;

8. You have, O lord, blazed up in anger from anger this fire has proceeded, and the fire now consumes rocks, trees and rivers;

9. And all kinds of shrubs and grass. Verily that fire is blasting the mobile and immobile universe.